ПЕРВАЯ РУССКАЯ КНИГА

FIRST RUSSIAN BOOK

FORBES

OXFORD
AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

FIRST RUSSIAN BOOK

BY THE SAME AUTHOR

RUSSIAN GRAMMAR. *Second edition, revised and enlarged, with indexes.* 6s. net.

SERBIAN GRAMMAR, by DRAGUTIN SUBOTIĆ and NEVILL FORBES. 7s. 6d. net.

SECOND RUSSIAN BOOK. A PRACTICAL MANUAL OF RUSSIAN VERBS. (The most important verbs with full phonetic transcription, and numerous examples of their use.) 3s. 6d. net.

THIRD RUSSIAN BOOK. Extracts from AKSÁKOV, GRIGORÓVICH, HÉRZEN, and SALTYKÓV, with accents marked throughout, copious notes, and complete vocabulary. 3s. net.

FOURTH RUSSIAN BOOK. Russian and English exercises, &c., specially designed for use with the above volumes, including examples of Russian correspondence. Part I, English-Russian Exercises. 2s. net. Part II in preparation.

THE BALKANS: The History of the Balkan States and the Turkish Empire. By NEVILL FORBES, D. G. HOGARTH, D. MITRANY, and ARNOLD TOYNBEE. With maps. 6s. 6d. net.

A HISTORY OF RUSSIA from the Varangians to the Bolsheviks. By C. RAYMOND BEAZLEY, NEVILL FORBES, and G. A. BIRKETT, with an introduction by ERNEST BARKER. With maps. 8s. 6d. net.

FIRST RUSSIAN BOOK

A PRACTICAL MANUAL OF RUSSIAN DECLENSIONS

BY

NEVILL FORBES, M.A.

READER IN RUSSIAN AND THE OTHER SLAVONIC LANGUAGES
IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

SECOND EDITION

OXFORD
AT THE CLARENDON PRESS
1919

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS
LONDON EDINBURGH GLASGOW NEW YORK
TORONTO MELBOURNE CAPE TOWN BOMBAY
HUMPHREY MILFORD
PUBLISHER TO THE UNIVERSITY

PREFACE

THIS book is intended as a practical means of acquainting the student of Russian with the first difficulties of the language, which are the case-endings. Without a knowledge of these no real progress can be made. In order that the process of their acquisition may be as palatable as possible many words and phrases of immediate utility have been inserted. Virtually no verbs are dealt with in this volume, as a great deal can be said in Russian without any verbs at all. The only one given in this book in full is the verb *to be*; the terrors of the Russian verb are reserved for the Second Book. Where practicable the Russian words have been printed also transliterated in English characters to give some idea of pronunciation. When using the book the table of contents should be carefully read.

N. F.

OXFORD, *September* 1915.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER		PAGE
1.	The Alphabet	1
2.	Pronunciation	2
3.	Indeclinable words	10
4.	Easy phrases without verbs	13
5.	A few useful Adverbs	17
6.	Words with masculine and feminine endings	20
7.	Continuation of two previous chapters	24
8.	The Verb *to be* (быть)	27
9.	The Nominative: Substantives	31
10.	Vocabulary: Outside and inside of buildings, rooms, furniture, &c.	38
11.	Vocabulary: Travel	43
12.	Vocabulary: Time, weather, &c.	46
13.	Vocabulary: The points of the compass, names of countries, nationalities, towns, rivers, and Christian, patronymic, and surnames. The use of personal names in Russian	48
14.	The Nominative: Pronouns	55
15.	Vocabulary of words denoting male and female beings	57
16.	Examples of Pronouns used in agreement with Nouns	62
17.	The Nominative: Adjectives	70
18.	Examples of Adjectives used in agreement with Nouns	72
19.	Vocabulary: Adjectives denoting size, shape, and position	73
20.	Vocabulary: Adjectives denoting appearance and quality	75
21.	Vocabulary: Adjectives denoting colour and age	77
22.	Vocabulary: Adjectives denoting nationality; Adjectives as Surnames and Nouns	79
23.	The two forms of the Adjective	80
24.	Pronouns like Adjectives, *which*, &c.	82
25.	The Genitive: Substantives	89

CHAPTER		PAGE
26.	The Genitive: Pronouns	96
27.	The Genitive: Adjectives	99
28.	Vocabulary: Literature, music, theatre, &c.	100
29.	Phrases containing words in the Genitive	102
30.	*His, her,* and *their*	105
31.	Vocabulary: Food, drink, &c.	106
32.	The Genitive in Negations	109
33.	The Genitive of Quantity (food, &c.)	111
34.	Use of the Nominative and Genitive after Numbers	114
35.	The Genitive of Time	119
36.	The Genitive of Date	121
37.	The Genitive of Comparison	122
38.	Vocabulary: The human body, health	129
39.	Vocabulary: Animal and plant life	131
40.	The Verb *to have*	134
✖41.	*Not to have*	139
✖42.	*To have*: Past and future	140
43.	Prepositions with the Genitive: *in the possession of, without, for, until, out of, away from, near, after, except, instead of, alongside of* (у, безъ, для, до, изъ, отъ, о́коло, по́слѣ, кро́мѣ, вмѣ́сто, во́злѣ)	142
44.	The Dative: Substantives	147
45.	The Dative: Pronouns	151
46.	The Dative: Adjectives	153
47.	Phrases with words in the Dative; wants and requests, addressing letters	154
48.	Vocabulary: Clothes	159
49.	Age	161
50.	Prepositions with the Dative: *to, along, according to, at the rate of* (къ, по)	162
51.	The Accusative: Substantives, Pronouns, and Adjectives	164
52.	Phrases with words in the Accusative	166
53.	Prepositions with the Accusative: *into, to, on to, for, at the rate of, through, across* (въ, на, за, по, черезъ)	167
54.	The Instrumental: Substantives	171
55.	The Instrumental: Pronouns	177

CHAPTER PAGE

56. The Instrumental: Adjectives 178
57. Uses of the Instrumental: Agent, instrument, predicate, time, season 179
58. Prepositions with the Instrumental: *behind, for, under, above, before, in front of, between, from* (за, подъ, надъ, пе́редъ, ме́жду, съ) 181
59. The Locative: Substantives 185
60. The Locative: Pronouns 190
61. The Locative: Adjectives 192
62. The Locative and the Prepositions: *in, on, about, in presence of, after* (въ, на, о, при, по) . . 193

INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES 200
SUBJECT INDEX 216

NOTE ON THE ACCENT

In Russian the accent is mobile; it can fall on any syllable of a word, and in the case of declinable words it can fall on various syllables according to the different cases, either on the termination or on one of the syllables of the stem. Some words identical in appearance are totally different in meaning, and this difference is only expressed by the accent. The rules which govern its incidence are, however, so intricate that the beginner is recommended to learn by ear or by observation where the accent falls on the commonest cases of the commonest words. In this book the accent is marked throughout.

CHAPTER 1

THE ALPHABET

	NAME	VALUE
А а	а	*a*
Б б	бе	*b*
В в	ве	*v*
Г г	ге	*g*
Д д	де	*d*
Е е	е	*ye*
Ж ж	же	*zh*
З з	зе	*z*
И и	и	*yi*
І і[1]		*i*
Й й[2]		
К к	ка	*k*
Л л	эль	*l*
М м	эмъ	*m*
Н н	энъ	*n*
О о	о	*o*
П п	пе	*p*
Р р	эръ	*r*

	NAME	VALUE
С с	эсъ	*s*
Т т	те	*t*
У у	у	*u*
Ф ф	эфъ	*f*
Х х	ха	*(k)h*
Ц ц	це	*ts*
Ч ч	че	*ch*
Ш ш	ша	*sh*
Щ щ	ща	*shch*
Ъ ъ	еръ	cf. p. 6
Ы ы	еры́	*y*
Ь ь	ерь	cf. p. 6
Ѣ ѣ[3]	ять	*ye*
Э э[4]	э	*e*
Ю ю	ю	*yu*
Я я	я	*ya*
Ѳ ѳ	ѳита́	*f* } Obsolete
Ѵ ѵ	и́жица	*i* } Obsolete

[1] Called и съ то́чкой = *i with a dot.*

[2] Called и съ кра́ткой = *i with a short quantity.*

[3] Has exactly the same value as e, but is of different origin.

[4] Called э обора́тное = *e reversed.*

General Observation

а э ы о у are called hard vowels,
ъ is called the hard sign,
я е (ѣ) и [ё][1] ю are called soft vowels,
ь is called the soft sign.

б в г д ж з are called voiced consonants,
п ф (ѳ) к т ш с } are called voiceless con-
and х ц ч щ } sonants.

CHAPTER 2

PRONUNCIATION

The Vowels

А а like *a* in *car*
ма́тушка (*mother*) mátushka

Я я like *ya* in *yard*
тамо́жня (*custom-house*) tamózhnya

Obs. 1. а and я when followed by a consonant + ь are, more especially when accented, pronounced almost like *ai* in *Cairo* (transliterated a^{i}) :

царь (*tsar*) tsá^{i}r'

Obs. 2. я when unaccented and preceding the stress often sounds almost like ye, or yi, or even e or i :

пятьдеся́тъ (*fifty*) pidyesyát

[1] ё = *yo*, cf. note on p. 5.

Э э like *e* in *ell*

этáжъ (*story*, sc. *of a house*) etásh

Obs. When accented the pronunciation of э depends on what letters follow it.

(1) If followed by a consonant + hard vowel or ъ it is pronounced almost

like *ai* in *air* (transliterated e^a)

э́та (*this*, f.) é^{a}ta

(2) If followed by a consonant + soft vowel it is pronounced

like *a* in *ale* (transliterated e^i)

э́ти (*these*) é^{i}tyi

Е е like *ye* in *yell*
(Ѣ ѣ)

Екатери́на (*Catherine*) yekatyerína

гнѣздó (*nest*) gnyezdó

Obs. When accented the pronunciation of е depends on what letters follow it.

(1) If followed by a consonant + hard vowel or ъ it is pronounced almost like *yai* in *yair* (i.e. the English word *air* preceded by the *y*-sound; transliterated ye^a)

газéта (*newspaper*) gazyé^{a}ta

колѣ́но (*knee*) kalyé^{a}na

(2) If followed by a consonant + soft vowel or ь it is pronounced

like *ya* in *Yale* (transliterated ye^i)

есть (*there is*) yé^{i}st'

здѣсь (*here*) zdyé^{i}s'

Ы ы like *y* in *Rhyl*

ры́ба (*fish*) rýba

И и like *i* in *ravine*

(Й й / I i / V v)

вино́ (*wine*) vinó

Obs. 1. й (transliterated i) is only used when this letter forms the second half of a diphthong:

мой (*my*, m.) moi

After ы and i (ый, ий = y, i) where it is not audible, it is not transliterated.

Obs. 2. i (transliterated i) is only used when this letter is followed by a vowel [1]:

А́нглія (*England*) ángliya

Obs. 3. v is only used in a few ecclesiastical words of Greek origin and sounds like и.

Obs. 4. *y* = ы almost always comes between two consonants; in those few cases where it is followed by a vowel, a hyphen is inserted to show that it does not belong to the following vowel e (*ye*) or я (*ya*), cf. pp. 70, 71.

[1] Except in the word міръ = *world*, spelt thus to differentiate it from миръ = *peace*.

О о (1) when accented
like *o* in *or*
мóре (*sea*) mórye

(2) when unaccented and before the accent
like *a* in *car*
молокó (*milk*) malakó

(3) when unaccented and after the accent
like *a* in *paternal*
я́блоко (*apple*) yáblaka

Obs. When followed by a consonant + ь, more especially when it is accented, о is pronounced almost
like *oi* in *soil* (transliterated o^{i})
соль (*salt*) só^{i}l'

[Ё ё] like *yo* in *yore*
озёра (*lakes*) azyóra

Obs. This is not counted a separate letter in Russian, hence the brackets; the diaeresis (¨), seldom marked in Russian books, implies the accent, as this sound never occurs in unaccented syllables.

У у like *u* in *rule*
у́тка (*duck*) útka

Ю ю like *yu* in *yule*
ключь (*key*) klyuch

Ъ ъ has no sound and merely indicates that the preceding consonant is hard :

полъ (*floor*) pol

Obs. This is called the hard sign ; it occurs also in the middle of words made up of a preposition ending in a consonant and a root beginning with a vowel, but never has any sound :

подъѣздъ (*front door*) padyé^{a}st

Ь ь indicates that the preceding consonant is soft :

соль (*salt*) só^{i}l'

Obs. This is called the soft sign ; it occurs also in the middle of words where a consonant has to be softened :

мáльчикъ (*boy*) má^{i}l'chik

In such cases and at the end of words it is transliterated by a comma at the top right hand of the consonant which is softened.

The Consonants

Б б like *b* in English, but at the end of words almost like *p* :

лобъ (*forehead*) lop

П п like *p* in English.

В в like *v* in English, but at the end of words almost like *f* :

Кíевъ (*Kiev*) kíyef

Ф ф
Θ θ } like *f* in English.

Г г like *g* in *good*, but at the end of words almost like *k*:

лугъ (*meadow*) luk.

Obs. 1. In the word Богъ (*God*) it is pronounced like х, i.e. *kh*; also before к:

легкó (*it is easy*) lyekhkó

Obs. 2. Before д (*d*) it is pronounced like *gh*:

гдѣ (*where*) ghdyé

К к like *k* in English.

Obs. Before т (*t*) and к (*k*) it is pronounced like х (i.e. *kh*):

кто (*who*) khto

къ кому́ (*to whom*) khkamú

Х х like *kh* in (Scotch) *loch*; at the beginning of words more like English *h*:

хорошó (*all right*) (k)harashó

Д д like *d* in English, but at the end of words almost like *t*:

годъ (*year*) got

Т т like *t* in English.

З з like *z* in English, but at the end of words almost like *s*:

разъ (*a stroke, a time*) ras

С с like *s* in *so*.

Ж ж like *s* in *measure* (transliterated zh), but at the end of words almost like *sh*:

мужъ (*husband*) mush

Ш ш like *sh* in English.

Ц ц like *ts* in English.

Ч ч like *ch* in English (N.B. note on p. 13).

Щ щ like *shch* in *Ashchurch*.

М м like *m* in English.

Н н like *n* in English.

Л л like *l* in English.

Р р like *r* in Scots (i.e. rolled).

Obs. Voiced consonants immediately preceding voiceless consonants become voiceless :

всё (*everything*) fsyó

General observations on Pronunciation

1. The consonants

л н т д

are especially affected by the quality of the following vowel or sign :

Hard л лобъ (*forehead*) lop (l = *ll* in *ell*)
Soft л лёдъ (*ice*) lyot (l as in *lewd*)
Hard л полъ (*floor*) pol (l = *ll* in *ell*)
Soft л соль (*salt*) só^{i}l' (l' as in *lewd*)

Hard н носъ (*nose*) nos
Soft н не́бо (*sky*) nyé^{a}ba (n as in *new*)
Hard н бара́нъ (*sheep*) barán
Soft н конь (*steed*) kó^{i}n' (n' as in *new*)

Hard т томъ (*volume*) tom
Soft т тѣ́ло (*body*) tyé^{a}la (t as in *tune*)
Hard т ротъ (*mouth*) rot
Soft т сля́коть (*slush*) slyákat' (t' as in *tune*)

Hard д домъ (*house*) dom
Soft д день (*day*) dyé^{i}n' (d as in *due*)
Hard д мёдъ (*honey*) myot
Soft д дождь (*rain*) dó^{i}sht' (t' as in *tune*)

2. After ш and ж the soft sign ь becomes like the hard sign ъ, i.e. mute, and loses its effect.

3. After ш and ж the vowel и sounds like ы:

ýжинъ (*supper*) úzhyn.

4. After the consonants л, н, т, д the vowel и acquires an initial *y*-sound:

дитя́ (*child*) dyityá

ничего́ (*nothing*) nyichevó (cf. Obs. 9).

5. After all the other consonants and also at the beginning of words it is pronounced as described on p. 4:

пи́во (*beer*) píva

имѣ́ніе (*property*) imyé'niye

except in the three words:

имъ, ихъ, и́ми, cf. pp. 96, 151, 177.

6. After ж, ш, ч, and щ the vowel е (ѣ) loses its initial *y*-sound:

уже́ (*already*) uzhé.

7. After all the other consonants except л, н, т, д, е (ѣ) loses its initial *y*-sound in rapid speech when it is unaccented and often even when it is accented; this is expressed in transliteration by bracketing the (y):

вре́мя (*time*) vr(y)é'mya.

8. After ж, ш, ч, and щ the vowel [ё] loses its *y*-sound [1]:

ещё (*yet, still, more*) yeshchó

colloquially: ishchó.

9. In the masc. and neut. genitive singular of all pronouns and adjectives г is pronounced like в:

кого́ (*of whom*) kavó

сего́дня (*to-day*, literally = *of this day*) s(y)evódnya

[1] And in these cases is sometimes even written о.

CHAPTER 3

INDECLINABLE WORDS

и	i	*and*
а	a	*and, but*
но	no	*but*
ну, нусъ, ну́ка	nu, nus, nuka	*well!*
и́ли	ílyi	*or*
и . . . и . . .	i . . . i . . .	*both . . . and . . .*
ни . . . ни . . .	nyi . . . nyi . . .	*neither . . . nor . . .*
и́ли . . . и́ли . . .	ílyi . . . ílyi . . .	*either . . . or . . .*
да	da	*yes* (also = *and, but*)
нѣтъ	nyé^{a}t	*no* (also = *there is not*)
не	nye	*not*
гдѣ	ghdyé	*where*
тутъ	tut	*here*
здѣсь	zdyé^{i}s'	*here*
тамъ	tam	*there*
вездѣ	v(y)ezdyé	*everywhere*
нигдѣ	nyighdyé	*nowhere*
напра́во	napráva	*on* or *to the right*
налѣво	nalyé^{a}va	*on* or *to the left*
сего́дня	s(y)evódnya	*to-day*
когда́	kaghdá	*when*
тепе́рь	tyep(y)é^{i}r'	*now*
тогда́	taghdá	*then*
всегда́	fs(y)eghdá	*always*
иногда́	inaghdá	*sometimes*
никогда́	nyikaghdá	*never*
давно́	davnó	*long since*
неда́вно	nyedávna	*lately*

N.B.

вотъ		vot	*here is, there is*
вонъ		von	*over there, yonder*
то́же		tózhe	*also, likewise*
та́кже		tákzhe	
уже́		uzhé	*already, now, really*
ужъ		uzh	
да́же		dázhe	*even*
опя́ть		apyá^{i}t'	*again*
ещё	N.B.	ishchó	*yet, still, more*
уже́ не		uzhé nye	*no longer*
ещё не		ishchó nye	*not yet*
совсѣ́мъ		safsyé^{a}m	*quite*
не совсѣ́мъ		nye safsyé^{a}m	*not quite*
совсѣ́мъ не . . .		safsyé^{a}m nye	*not at all . . .*
о́чень		óchen'	*very, very much*
не о́чень		nye óchen'	*not very*
вѣ́дь	N.B.	vit'	*for*
почти́		pachtyí	*nearly*
сли́шкомъ		slyíshkam	*too*
дово́льно		davó^{i}l'na	*enough*
мно́го		mnóga	*much, a lot, many*
о́чень мно́го		óchen' mnóga	*a great deal, many*
ма́ло		mála	*little, not enough*
немно́го		nyemnóga	*a little, some*
немно́жко		nyemnóshka	
нѣ́сколько		nyé^{a}skal'ka	*a few, some few*
ниско́лько		nyiskó^{i}l'ka	*not in the least*
ско́лько		skó^{i}l'ka	*how much, how many*
сто́лько		stó^{i}l'ka	*so much, as much*
только		tó^{i}l'ka	*only, however, but*

какъ	kak	*how, as*
такъ	tak	*so, thus*
какъ ма́ло	kak mála	*what a little, how few*
такъ ма́ло	tak mála	*such a little, so few*
такъ мно́го	tak mnóga	*such a lot*
сто́лько	stó^{i}l'ka	
ско́лько	skó^{i}l'ka	*what a lot*
ра́звѣ ?	rázv(y)e	*surely not ?*
неуже́ли !	nyeuzhélyi	*can it be that ?*
ра́звѣ . . . не ?	rázv(y)e nye	*surely ?*
вря́дъ ли	vryádlyi	*it is doubtful whether*
пожа́луйста N.B.	pazhálsta	*please*
спаси́бо	spasíba	*thank you*
извини́те	izvinyítye	*excuse me*
прости́те	prastyítye	*forgive me*
проща́йте	prashcháityе	*good-bye*
здра́вствуйте	(zdráfstvuitye)	*how do you do* (lit. *be well*); *good morning*
usually pronounced	zdrástye	
до свида́нія	dasvidániya	*au revoir* (lit. *till the meeting*)
ну́жно	núzhna	*it is necessary, one must*
на́до	náda	
не ну́жно	nye núzhna	*it is not necessary*
не на́до	nye náda	*it is unnecessary, don't*
мо́жно	mózhna	*it is possible, one may*
нельзя́	nyel'zyă	*it is impossible, one mayn't*
гдѣ-то	ghdyé^{a}ta	*somewhere*
гдѣ-нибудь	ghdyényibut'	*anywhere, somewhere or other*

когда́-то	kaghdáta	*some time, formerly*
когда́-нибудь	kaghdányibut'	*any time* *some time or other*
ка́къ-то	kákta	*somehow, sort of, such as*
ка́къ-нибу́дь	káknyibut'	*anyhow* *somehow or other*

авóсь, небóсь, да ка́къ-нибудь! (Russian proverb)
avó[i]s', nyebó[i]s', da káknyibut'
with luck, no doubt, we'll muddle through!

CHAPTER 4

EASY SENTENCES AND PHRASES FORMED WITHOUT ANY VERB

The present tense of the verb *to be* is almost always omitted in Russian, but cf. p. 27.

кто э́то? khto é[a]ta э́то кто?	= *who is this, who is that?*
что э́то? chto[1] é[a]ta э́то что?	= *what is this, what is that?*
э́то онъ	= *it is he, that is he*
э́то онъ? онъ[2] ли э́то?	= *is it he? is that he?*
да, э́то она́[2]	= *yes, it is she*
нѣтъ, э́то не они́[2]	= *no, it is not they*

[1] Colloquially shto.

[2] For the pronunciation of these cf. p. 55.

гдѣ онъ ?	= *where is he ?*
она́ тутъ она́ здѣсь	= *she is here*
они́ тамъ	= *they are there*
она́ тамъ ? тамъ ли она́ ?	= *is she there ?*
онъ здѣсь ? здѣсь ли онъ ?	= *is he here ?*
кто тамъ ?	= *who is there ?*

Obs. A question must not be introduced by the interrogative particle ли when it already contains an interrogative pronoun or adverb such as кто, что, гдѣ.

онъ тутъ и она́ тутъ = *he is here and she is here*
она́ здѣсь а онъ тамъ = *she is here but he is there*

Obs. The particle a can often be translated by *and*, but always implies an antithesis.

э́то и́ли онъ и́ли она́ = *it is either he or she*
э́то ни онъ ни она́ = *it is neither he nor she*

онъ, она́, оно́ здѣсь = *it is here*
они́, онѣ́ тамъ = *they are there*

Obs. оно́ is the specifically neuter personal pronoun meaning *it*, but it must be remembered that if the object referred to is masculine, then онъ, and if feminine, then она́ must be used, both of which, in the case of inanimate objects, would be translated in English by *it*. The place of оно́ is often taken by э́то. Similarly онѣ́ is the specifically

feminine plural of the personal pronoun, while онѝ is the masculine and neuter plural, both meaning *they*; when the objects referred to are of several genders, e.g. masculine and feminine, онѝ is used.

вотъ онъ	=	*here he is, there he is* *here it is, there it is*
вотъ онá	=	*here she is, there she is* *here it is, there it is*
вотъ онó	=	*here it is, there it is*
вотъ онѝ вотъ онѣ	=	*here they are, there they are*
вотъ онѝ здѣсь вотъ онѣ здѣсь	=	*this is where they are, here*
вотъ онъ тамъ	=	*there he* (or *it*) *is over there*
вотъ онá тамъ	=	*there she* (or *it*) *is over there*
вотъ онѝ гдѣ вотъ гдѣ онѝ	=	*that's where they are*
вотъ гдѣ	=	*that's where* (*he* or *it is*)
онъ ужé здѣсь	=	*he is already here*
онá ещё тамъ	=	*she is still there*
мы ещё здѣсь	=	*we are still here*
онѝ ужé тамъ	=	*they are already there*
я ужé здѣсь, а ты ещё тамъ	=	*I am here already, but thou art still there*
онъ ещё здѣсь, а онá ужé тамъ	=	*he is still here, but she is already there*
онъ тóже здѣсь	=	*he is here also*
онá тóже тамъ	=	*she is there also*
онѝ тепéрь тамъ тóже	=	*they are there now also*
мы тóже всегдá дóма	=	*we also are always at home*

онъ опя́ть тамъ	=	*he is there again*
она́ опя́ть здѣсь	=	*she is here again*
вотъ онъ опя́ть !	=	*here he is again !*
мы опя́ть до́ма	=	*we are again at home*
онъ тепе́рь опя́ть здѣсь	=	*he is here again now*
она́ тепе́рь опя́ть тамъ	=	*she is there again now*
онъ сего́дня тутъ	=	*he is here to-day*
она́ сего́дня до́ма	=	*she is at home to-day*
они́ сего́дня тамъ	=	*they are there to-day*
онъ тепе́рь здѣсь	=	*he is now here*
она́ тепе́рь тамъ	=	*she is now there*
гдѣ они́ тепе́рь ?	=	*where are they now ?*
они́ тепе́рь до́ма	=	*they are now at home*
они́ тепе́рь до́ма ?	=	*are they at home now ?*
до́ма ли они́ тепе́рь ?	=	*are they at home now ?*
тепе́рь нельзя́	=	*now one musn't, can't*
тепе́рь мо́жно	=	*now one may, can*
онъ всегда́ тамъ	=	*he is always there*
она́ всегда́ здѣсь	=	*she is always here*
они́ всегда́ до́ма	=	*they are always at home*
ты всегда́ здѣсь ?	=	*art thou always here ?*
я всегда́ здѣсь	=	*I am always here*
вы всегда́ тамъ ?	=	*are you always there ?*
мы всегда́ тамъ	=	*we are always there*
я здѣсь, а ты тамъ	=	*I am here, but thou art there*
мы тутъ, а вы тамъ	=	*we are here, but you are there*
ра́звѣ она́ здѣсь ?	=	*is she here ?* *surely she is not here ?*
неуже́ли онъ тамъ ?	=	*can it be that he is there ?*

ра́звѣ э́то не они́ ?	= *surely that is they ?*
вря́дъ ли они́ до́ма	= *I doubt whether they are at home*
я давно́ тутъ	= *I have been here for a long time*
она́ тамъ неда́вно	= *she hasn't been there long*

Obs. ты is used in Russian amongst relatives and intimate friends of more or less the same age; parents and children address each other by ты, and children are usually addressed by ты by their parents' friends; it was formerly invariably used by the educated classes when addressing servants, cab-drivers, porters, &c., but nowadays вы is much more generally used for this purpose, and in any case it is better for a foreigner to say вы.

Obs. In correspondence Вы must be written with a capital even in the middle of a sentence. On the other hand я is only written (or printed) with a capital at the beginning of a sentence, after a full stop.

CHAPTER 5

A FEW USEFUL ADVERBS

In the case of most adjectives the Neuter Nominative Singular, which is the same in form as the Adverb, can stand alone without оно́ or э́то and have the meaning of a whole sentence.

хорошо́	(k)harashó	(*it is*) *good, nice*
нехорошо́	nyekharashó	(*it is*) *not nice*
пло́хо	plókha	(*it is*) *bad*
лу́чше	lúchshe	(*it is*) *better*

ху́же	(k)húzhe	*(it is) worse*
чѣмъ	chem	*than*
гора́здо	garázda	*much* (only followed by comparatives)

(For other common adverbs cf. pp. 24, 25.)

хорошо́ = *all right, very well*

хорошо́ = *nice, good* (neuter nom. sing.)

э́то хорошо́ = *that is all right, this is all right* / *that is nice, this is good*

э́то нехорошо́ = *that is bad, this is bad* / *that is wrong* (sc. *unpleasant* or *unjust*)

вотъ хорошо́ ! = *isn't that nice !*

вотъ э́то хорошо́ ! = *there, that's nice ! this is nice !*

здѣсь хорошо́ = *it is nice here*

здѣсь нехорошо́ = *it is not nice here*

тамъ хорошо́ = *it is nice there*

тепе́рь хорошо́ = *it's all right now*

какъ э́то хорошо́ = *how nice this is*

э́то такъ хорошо́ = *that is so nice*

какъ э́то нехорошо́ = *how horrid that is*

э́то о́чень хорошо́ = *that is very nice*

э́то о́чень нехорошо́ = *that is not at all nice*

какъ тамъ хорошо́ = *how nice it is there*

такъ здѣсь хорошо́ = *it is so nice here*

тамъ такъ хорошо́ = *it is so nice there*

какъ хорошо́ здѣсь = *how nice it is here*

какъ хорошо́ тепе́рь = *how nice it is now*

здѣсь не такъ хорошо́ = *it is not so nice here*

тамъ такъ нехорошо́ = *it is so horrid there*

здѣсь всегда́ хорошо́ = *here it's always nice*

тамъ не всегда́ хорошо́ = *it's not always nice there*
такъ, хорошо́ = *it's all right like that*
такъ, нехорошо́ = *it's not right like that*
э́то лу́чше = *this is better, that is better*
э́то ху́же = *this is worse, that is worse*
здѣсь лу́чше = *it is better here*
тамъ ху́же = *it is worse there*
здѣсь лу́чше чѣмъ тамъ = *here it's better than there*
тамъ ху́же чѣмъ здѣсь = *there it's worse than here*
здѣсь хорошо́, а тамъ лу́чше = *it's nice here, but it's better there*
здѣсь нехорошо́, а тамъ ху́же = *it's bad here, but it's worse there*
гдѣ лу́чше, здѣсь и́ли тамъ? = *where is it better, here or there?*
какъ лу́чше, такъ и́ли такъ? = *how is it better, like this or like that?*
вотъ такъ лу́чше = *there, it's better like that*
нѣтъ, такъ ху́же = *no, it's worse like that*
да, такъ лу́чше = *yes, it's better like that*
да, такъ ещё лу́чше = *yes, that's still better*
нѣтъ, такъ ещё ху́же = *no, that's still worse*
э́то ещё лу́чше = *that's still better*
э́то ещё ху́же = *that's still worse*
сего́дня лу́чше = *it's better to-day*
тепе́рь ху́же = *now it's worse*
сего́дня опя́ть лу́чше = *it's better again to-day*
тепе́рь опя́ть ху́же = *now it's worse again*
тепе́рь уже́ лу́чше = *it's better now (already)*
здѣсь ещё лу́чше = *it's still better here*
до́ма всегда́ лу́чше = *it's always better at home*
э́то пло́хо = *that is bad*

э́то здоро́во = *this is good for the health* (neut. nom. sing.)

э́то нездоро́во, э́то вре́дно = *that is bad for the health*

э́то (о́чень) прія́тно = *that is (very) pleasant*
э́то (о́чень) непрія́тно = *that is (very) unpleasant*
э́то (о́чень) краси́во = *that is (very) pretty*
э́то (о́чень) некраси́во = *that is (very) ugly*
ра́звѣ э́то вре́дно ? = *surely that isn't bad for one ?*
э́то совсѣ́мъ хорошо́ = *that's quite all right*

CHAPTER 6

INTRODUCING WORDS WITH MASCULINE AND FEMININE ENDINGS

онъ здоро́въ [1] = *he is well* (masc. nom. sing.)
она́ здоро́ва [2] = *she is well* (fem. nom. sing.)
они́, онѣ́ здоро́вы = *they are well* (masc. / fem. nom. plur.)
я здоро́въ = *I am well* (masc.)
я здоро́ва = *I am well* (fem.)
ты нездоро́въ = *thou art unwell* (masc.)
ты нездоро́ва = *thou art unwell* (fem.)
мы здоро́вы = *we are well* (masc. and fem.)
вы нездоро́вы = *you are unwell* (masc. and fem.)
ра́звѣ вы нездоро́вы ? = *aren't you well ?* (masc. and fem.)
вы здоро́вы ?, здоро́вы ли вы ? = *are you well ?* (masc. and fem.)

(ли is the interrogative particle and always indicates a question.)

[1] Pron. zdaróf.

[2] Pron. zdaróva.

онъ всегда́ здоро́въ	= *he is always well*
она́ тепе́рь нездоро́ва	= *she is not well now*
вы опя́ть нездоро́вы ?	= *are you unwell again ?*
я совсѣ́мъ здоро́въ	= *I am quite well*
я не совсѣ́мъ здоро́въ	= *I am not quite well*
я о́чень нездоро́въ	= *I am far from well*
я уже́ совсѣ́мъ здоро́въ	= *I am now quite well*
я ещё не совсѣ́мъ здоро́въ	= *I am not yet quite well*

онъ бо́ленъ [1]	= *he is ill* (masc. nom. sing.)
она́ больна́ [2]	= *she is ill* (fem. nom. sing.)
они́ больны́	= *they are ill* (masc. nom. plur.)
онѣ́ больны́	= *they are ill* (fem. nom. plur.)
я о́чень бо́ленъ	= *I am very ill* (masc.)
ты серьёзно больна́	= *thou art seriously ill* (fem.)
вы опа́сно больны́	= *you are dangerously ill* (masc. or fem.)
онъ не о́чень бо́ленъ	= *he is not very ill*
она́ не серьёзно больна́	= *she is not seriously ill*
вы не опа́сно больны́	= *you are not seriously ill*
онъ тепе́рь бо́ленъ	= *he is ill now*
она́ всегда́ больна́	= *she is always ill*
онъ ещё бо́ленъ	= *he is still ill*
она́ то́же больна́	= *she is ill also*
онъ опя́ть бо́ленъ	= *he is ill again*
неуже́ли она́ больна́ ?	= *surely she is not ill ?*

я радъ [3]	= *I am glad* (masc.)
я ра́да [4]	= *I am glad* (fem.)

[1] Pron. bólyen.
[2] Pron. bal'ná.
[3] Pron. rat.
[4] Pron. ráda.

вы ра́ды ?	= *are you glad ?* (masc. and fem.)
мы о́чень ра́ды	= *we are very glad* (masc. and fem.)
я такъ радъ	= *I am so glad* (masc.)
какъ я ра́да !	= *how glad I am !* (fem.)
развѣ вы не ра́ды ?	= *aren't you glad ?* (masc. and fem.)
онъ сча́стливъ [1]	= *he is happy* (masc.)
она́ сча́стлива [2]	= *she is happy* (fem.)
они́ такъ сча́стливы	= *they are so happy*
какъ они́ сча́стливы !	= *how happy they are*
онъ несча́стенъ [3]	= *he is unhappy* (masc.)
она́ несча́стна [4]	= *she is unhappy* (fem.)
мы такъ несча́стны	= *we are so unfortunate*
какъ вы несча́стны !	= *how unlucky you are !*
я дово́ленъ [5]	= *I am satisfied, contented* (masc.)
я дово́льна [6]	= *I am satisfied, contented* (fem.)
они́ о́чень дово́льны	= *they are very glad*
они́ такъ дово́льны	= *they are so pleased*
вы дово́льны ?	= *are you satisfied ?*
дово́льны ли вы ?	= *are you satisfied ?*
мы совсѣмъ дово́льны	= *we are quite satisfied*
мы не совсѣмъ дово́льны	= *we are not quite satisfied*
онъ недово́ленъ	= *he is displeased*
она́ о́чень недово́льна	= *she is angry, annoyed*
вы о́чень недово́льны ?	= *are you angry, annoyed ?*

[1] schástlyif. [3] nyeschástyen. [5] davólyen.
[2] schástlyiva. [4] nyeschástna. [6] davól'na.

э́то дово́льно = *that is enough*
э́то не дово́льно = *that is not enough*
дово́льно = *it is enough*
о́чень дово́льно
совсе́мъ дово́льно } = *it's quite enough*
уже́ дово́льно
э́то ужъ дово́льно } = *that's enough now*
ра́звѣ вы недово́льны? = *aren't you satisfied?*

винова́ть! = { *excuse me!* (lit. *I am to blame*, masc.)

винова́та! = { *excuse me!* (lit. *I am to blame*, fem.)

онъ правъ[1] = *he is right*
она́ права́[2] = *she is right*
вы пра́вы = *you are right*
вы непра́вы = *you are wrong*
онъ до́лженъ[3] = *he must*
она́ должна́[4] = *she must*
мы должны́ = *we must*
они́ должны́ = *they must*
э́то серьёзно[5] = *that is serious*
вы серьёзны?
серьёзны ли вы? } = *are you serious?*
э́то дово́льно серьёзно = *that is fairly serious*
э́то о́чень серьёзно = *that is very serious*
ра́звѣ э́то серьёзно? = *is it really serious?*

гото́во[6] = *it is ready*
уже́ гото́во = *it is now ready*
е щё не гото́во = *it is not yet ready*

[1] praf. [3] dólzhen. [5] seryózna.
[2] pravá. [4] dalzhná. [6] gatóva.

вы гото́вы ? = *are you ready ?*
она́ гото́ва [1] = *she is ready*
онъ гото́въ [2] = *he is ready*
неуже́ли вы не гото́вы ! = *can it be that you are not ready ? surely you are ready !*

CHAPTER 7

CONTINUATION OF TWO PREVIOUS CHAPTERS

хо́лодно	(k)hóladna	*it is cold*
(*or* холодно́	(k)haladnó)	
тепло́	tyepló	*it is warm* (of the temperature, clothes)
жа́рко	zhárka	*it is hot* (of the temperature)
прохла́дно	prakhládna	*it is cool*
горячо́	garyachó	*it is hot* (of food, water, tea, plates, &c.)
те́мно́	tyemnó	*it is dark*
(*or* тёмно	tyómna)	
свѣ́тло́	sv(y)etló	*it is light*
ра́но	rána	*it is early*
по́здно	póz(d)na	*it is late*
дёшево	dyósheva	*it is cheap*
до́рого	dóraga	*it is dear*
вку́сно	fkúsna	*it is nice* (*to taste*)
невку́сно	nyefkúsna	*it is not nice* (*to taste*)

[1] gatóva. [2] gatóf.

далеко́ (*or* далёко	dalyekó dalyóka)	*it is far*
бли́зко	blyíska	*it is near*
за́нято	zányata	*it is occupied, engaged*
свобо́дно	svabódna	*it is free, vacant*
за́перто	záp(y)erta	*it is shut*
откры́то	atkrýta	*it is open*
опа́сно	apásna	*it is dangerous*
безопа́сно	b(y)ezapásna	*it is safe*

сего́дня хо́лодно = *it is cold to-day*
здѣсь тепло́ = *it is warm here*
тутъ прохла́дно = *it is cool here*
тамъ жа́рко = *it is hot there*

уже́ темно́ = *it is already dark*
ещё свѣтло́ = *it is still light*

уже́ по́здно = *it is now (too) late*
ещё ра́но = *it is yet early (too soon)*

сего́дня о́чень жа́рко = *it is very hot to-day*
сего́дня дово́льно тепло́ = *it is fairly warm to-day*
сего́дня сли́шкомъ хо́лодно = *it is too cold to-day*

тепе́рь уже́ не хо́лодно = *it is no longer cold now*
тепе́рь уже́ не такъ тепло́ = *it is no longer so warm now*
тепе́рь ужъ совсѣ́мъ темно́ = *it is really quite dark now*
тепе́рь ужъ о́чень по́здно = *it is really very late now*
тепе́рь ужъ сли́шкомъ жа́рко = *it is really too hot now*

The word уже́ is frequently cut down to ужъ and often loses its original meaning of *already* and comes to mean *really*.

э́то дёшево = *that is cheap*
э́то о́чень дёшево = *that is very cheap*
э́то не дёшево = *that is not cheap*
какъ э́то дёшево ! = *how cheap that is !*
ра́звѣ э́то дёшево ? = *do you call that cheap ?*

э́то до́рого = *that is dear*
э́то о́чень до́рого = *that is very dear*
э́то не до́рого = *that is not dear*
э́то совсѣмъ не до́рого = *that is not at all dear*
э́то ужъ сли́шкомъ до́рого = *that is really too dear*
какъ э́то до́рого ! = *how dear that is !*
неуже́ли э́то такъ до́рого ? = *surely this is not so dear ?*

э́то вку́сно = *that is nice* (only of food)
э́то не вку́сно = *that is not nice* (only of food)
ра́звѣ э́то вку́сно ? = *is that nice ?*
ра́звѣ э́то не вку́сно ? = *isn't that nice ?*

э́то о́чень далеко́ = *that is very far*
э́то совсѣмъ бли́зко = *that is quite near*
ра́звѣ э́то далеко́ ? = *is it far then ?*
неуже́ли э́то такъ бли́зко ? = *surely it is not so near ?*

сего́дня за́перто = *to-day it is shut*
сего́дня откры́то = *to-day it is open*
ра́звѣ не откры́то ? = *isn't it open ?*
неуже́ли за́перто ? = *surely it isn't shut ?*

опа́сно = *it is dangerous*
э́то опа́сно = *that is dangerous*
э́то о́чень опа́сно = *that is very dangerous*
э́то не опа́сно = *that is not dangerous*
э́то безопа́сно = *that is safe* (lit. = *dangerless*)
тамъ о́чень опа́сно = *it is very dangerous there*
здѣсь совсѣмъ безопа́сно = *it is quite safe here*

(cf. chap. 47).

CHAPTER 8

THE VERB *TO BE* (БЫТЬ)

The Present

There are only two parts of the present tense of the verb *to be* which are ever used, viz.:

есть = *is*
суть = *are*

of which the second is as good as obsolete, and the first is only used in the sense of

there is, there exists, is there? does there exist?

есть Богъ = *there is a God*
Богъ есть = *God exists*

есть вода́? = *is there water?*
вода́ есть = *there is water*

There is not is always rendered by нѣтъ (cf. p. 10), followed by the Genitive; нѣтъ is a contraction of не есть.

The Past

The past tense of the verb *to be*, like that of all other Russian verbs, is formed from the infinitive (быть) and varies not, as in other languages, according to person, but according to gender and number,[1] viz. :

я былъ = *I was* (if masculine)
я была́ = *I was* (if feminine)

ты былъ = *thou wast* (masc.)
ты была́ = *thou wast* (fem.)

онъ былъ = *he was*
она́ была́ = *she was*
э́то (*or* оно́) бы́ло = *it was*

мы бы́ли = *we were* (masc. and fem.)
вы бы́ли = *you were* (masc. and fem.)
они́ бы́ли = *they were* (masc. and neut.)
онѣ́ бы́ли = *they were* (fem.)

In answers to questions the verb in Russian is often repeated instead of using the words

да = *yes*
and нѣ́тъ = *no*

especially in such questions as

вы бы́ли тамъ ?
or бы́ли ли вы тамъ ? } = { *were you there ?* or, *have you been there ?*

[1] It is really a past participle active, not a tense.

былъ = *yes*
не́ былъ = *no*
} if masc. sing.

она́ была́ здѣсь? = *has she been here?*

была́ = *yes*
не была́ = *no*

они́ бы́ли до́ма? = *were they at home?*

бы́ли = *yes*

(cf. chap. 42).

The Conditional

The conditional tense of the verb *to be* is formed, like that of all other Russian verbs, by the addition of the particle бы (often -бъ in poetry) to the past as follows:

я былъ бы
or я бы былъ
} = *I should have been*, or *I should be*

она́ была́ бы
or она́ бы была́
} = *she would have been*, or *she would be*

мы бы́ли бы
or мы бы бы́ли
} = *we should have been*, or *we should be*

мы бы́ли бы о́чень ра́ды
we should be (or *should have been*) *very glad*

э́то бы́ло бы о́чень опа́сно
that would be (or *would have been*) *very dangerous*

онъ былъ бы дово́ленъ
he would be contented, pleased

When negatived, the word не is placed immediately before the words былъ, была́, бы́ло, &c.

The Future

я бу́ду = *I shall be*
ты бу́дешь = *thou wilt be*
онъ, она́, оно́ бу́детъ = *he, she, it will be*
мы бу́демъ = *we shall be*
вы бу́дете = *you will be*
они́, онѣ́ бу́дутъ = *they will be*

вчера́ fcherá *yesterday*
сего́дня s(y)evódnya *to-day*
за́втра záftra *to-morrow*
послѣза́втра poslyezáftra *the day after to-morrow*

вчера́ мы бы́ли до́ма = *yesterday we were at home*
за́втра мы бу́демъ до́ма = *to-morrow we shall be at home*

The Imperative

(2nd sing.) будь but'
(2nd plur.) бу́дьте búttye
бу́дьте такъ добры́ ! = *be so good !*

CHAPTER 9

THE NOMINATIVE

Substantives

Nominative Singular

It will have been noticed in the preceding pages that the endings of the nominative singular [1] are :

Masculine	-ъ, e.g.	онъ = *he*
Neuter	-о, e.g.	онó = *it*
		э́то = *this*, or *that*
		что = *what*
Feminine	-а, e.g.	онá = *she*

The three endings :

-ъ
-о
-а

are all hard : corresponding to them are the three soft endings :

Masculine	-ь (*or* -й)
Neuter	-е (*or* -ё)
Feminine	-я

[1] The words кто = *who*
я = *I*
ты = *thou*
can be used for masculine or feminine.

Examples :

Hard Nouns	Masc.	магази́нъ	magazín	*shop*
		биле́тъ	bilyé^{a}t	*ticket*
		столъ	stol	*table*
	Neut.	мѣ́сто	myé^{a}sta	*place*
		село́	s(y)eló	*village*
		о́бщество	ópshchestva	*society, company*
	Fem.	ба́ба	bába	*peasant woman*
		ко́мната	kómnata	*room*
		изба́	izbá	*peasant's hut*
Soft Nouns	Masc.	автомоби́ль	aftamabíl'	*motor-car*
		слу́чай	slúchai	*incident*
		солове́й	salavyéi	*nightingale*
		Васи́лій	vasílyi	*Basil*
	Neut.	по́ле	pólye	*field*
		ружьё	ruzhyó	*rifle*
		имѣ́ніе	imyé^{i}niye	*property (land)*
	Fem.	недѣ́ля	nyedyé^{i}lya	*week*
		статья́	statyá	*newspaper article*
		а́рмія	ármiya	*army*
		Россія	rassíya	*Russia*

There is no article in Russian, either definite or indefinite ; the place of the former is supplied, when required, by the pronoun тотъ = *that yonder*, that of the latter by the pronouns оди́нъ = *one* or нѣ́который = *a certain*.

A large number of nouns denoting males follow the feminine declension, e.g. :

(hard) мущи́на[1] mushchína = *man* (as opposed to *woman*)
(soft) судья́ sudyá = *judge*.

A large number of diminutive male Christian names likewise follow the feminine declension :

Алёша	Alyósha	*Alexis*
Ва́ня	Ványa	*John*
Ва́ся	Vásya	*Basil*
Воло́дя	Valódya	*Vladímir*
Ко́ля	Kólya	*Nicholas*
Ми́ша	Mísha	*Michael*
Павлу́ша	Pavlúsha	*Paul*
Пе́тя	P(y)é^{i}tya	*Peter*
Са́ша	Sásha	*Alexander*
Серёжа	Seryózha	*Sergius*
Фе́дя	F(y)é^{i}dya	*Theodore*

(For the full names cf. p. 52.)

A large number of feminine nouns end in -ь, such as :

ло́шадь	lóshat' *horse*
вещь	vyé^{i}shch' *thing*
це́рковь	ts(y)é^{i}rkaf' *church*
мать	má^{i}t' *mother*
дочь	dó^{i}ch' *daughter*

A few neuter nouns end in -я, e.g. :

вре́мя	vr(y)é^{i}mya *time*
дитя́	dyityá *child*

[1] Also spelt мужчи́на.

Rules for identification

All nouns of which the nom. sing. ends in -ъ, -й, are masculine.

All nouns of which the nom. sing. ends in -о, -е are neuter.

Most nouns of which the nom. sing. ends in -а, -я are feminine.

Nouns of which the nom. sing. ends in -ь are masculine or feminine.

Nominative Plural

The nominative plural endings are :

Masculine, Feminine	-ы, e.g. рáды = *glad*
Neuter	-а

These endings are hard ; corresponding to them are the soft endings :

Masculine, Feminine	-и
Neuter	-я

Examples :

Hard	Masculine	магази́ны	magazíny
		биле́ты	bilyé[a]ty
		столы́	stalý
	Neuter	мѣста́	m(y)está
		сёла	syóla
		о́бщества	ópshchestva
	Feminine	ба́бы	báby
		ко́мнаты	kómnaty
		и́збы	ízby

Soft	Masculine	автомоби́ли	aftamabílyi
		слу́чаи	slúchayi
		соловьи́	salavyí
	Neuter	поля́	palyá
		ру́жья	rúzhya
		имѣ́нія	imyé^{i}niya
	Feminine	недѣ́ли	nyedyé^{i}lyi
		статьи́	statyí
		а́рміи	ármiyi

Nouns denoting males which follow the feminine declension:

(hard) мущи́ны mushchíny
(soft) су́дьи súdyi

A good number of masculine nouns of which the nominative singular ends in -ъ have the nominative plural in -a,[1] e.g.:

NOM. SING.			NOM. PLUR.	
домъ	dom	*house*	дома́	damá
глазъ	glas	*eye*	глаза́	glazá
го́родъ	górat	*town*	города́	garadá
бе́регъ	b(y)é^{i}rek	*shore*	берега́	beregá

A large number of masculine nouns which contain e or o in the last syllable of the nominative singular lose this letter throughout the whole of the rest of the declension, e.g.:

	NOM. SING.			NOM. PLUR.	
Hard	коне́цъ	kanyé^{a}ts	*end*	концы́	kantsý
	посо́лъ	pasól	*ambassador*	послы́	paslý
Soft	день	dyé^{i}n’	*day*	дни	dnyi
	ого́нь	agó^{i}n’	*fire, light*	огни́	agnyí

[1] Several nouns have both plurals, in -ы and in -a, with a difference in meaning between the two, cf. p. 37.

All masculine nouns ending in the nominative singular in

-къ, -гъ, -хъ, -жъ, -чъ, -шъ, -щъ

and all feminine nouns ending in the nominative singular in

-ка, -га, -ха, -жа, -ча, -ша, -ща

have the nominative plural in

-ки, -ги, -хи, -жи, -чи, -ши, щи

because ы cannot stand after these consonants; but nevertheless -жи and -ши are pronounced -жы and -шы.

Examples:

NOM. SING.			NOM. PLUR.
ма́льчикъ	má^{i}l'chik	*boy*	ма́льчики má^{i}l'chiki
дѣ́вочка	dyé^{a}vachka	*little girl*	дѣ́вочки dyé^{a}vachki
ключъ	klyuch	*key*	ключи́ klyuchí
свѣ́чá	sv(y)echá	*candle*	свѣ́чи svyé^{i}chi
ножъ	nosh	*knife*	ножи́ nazhý
экипа́жъ	ekipásh	*carriage*	экипа́жи ekipázhy
кало́ша	kalósha	*galosh*	кало́ши kalóshy
—	—	*money*	де́ньги dyé^{i}ngi

Masculine nouns with nominative singular in -инъ have nominative plural in -е.

NOM. SING.			NOM. PLUR.
крестья́нинъ	krestyányin	*peasant (man)*	крестья́не
англича́нинъ	anglyichányin	*Englishman*	англича́не

Masculine nouns with nominative singular in -ёнокъ (denoting the young of animals) have nominative plural in -áта, and follow the neuter declension, e.g.:

NOM. SING.			NOM. PLUR.
ребёнокъ	rebýonak	*child*	ребя́та rebyáta
цыплёнокъ	tsyplyónak	*chicken*	цыпля́та tsyplyáta

A few neuter nouns have nominative plural in -и, e.g. :

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR.
я́блоко yáblaka	*apple*	я́блоки yáblaki
плечó plyechó	*shoulder*	плéчи plyé^{i}chi
колѣ́но kalyé^{a}na	*knee*	колѣ́ни kalyé^{i}nyi

A few masculine and neuter nouns have nominative plurals which call for particular notice ; amongst others the commonest are :

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR.[1]
стулъ stul	*chair*	сту́лья
братъ brat	*brother*	бра́тья
сынъ syn	*son*	сыновья́
другъ druk	*friend*	друзья́
сосѣ́дъ sasyé^{a}t	*neighbour*	сосѣ́ди
цвѣ́тъ tsvyé^{a}t	*colour*	цвѣта́ *colours*
(цвѣто́къ tsv(y)etók	*flower*)	цвѣты́ *flowers*
дéрево dyé^{i}reva	*tree*	дерéвья
сýдно súdna	*vessel* (*ship*)	суда́
ýхо úkha	*ear*	ýши
óко óka	*eye* (poetical)	óчи
чýдо chúda	*marvel*	чудесá
нéбо nyé^{a}ba	*heaven*, *sky*	небесá

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь have nominative plural in -и, e.g. :

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR.
лóшадь	*horse*	лóшади lóshadyi
вещь	*thing*	вéщи vyé^{i}shchi

[1] For pronunciation cf. p. 95.

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR.	
це́рковь	*church*	це́ркви	ts(y)é^{i}rkvi
мать	*mother*	ма́тери	mátyeri
дочь	*daughter*	до́чери	dócheri

Two very important words have a similar nominative plural, viz. :

лю́ди lyúdyi = *people*
дѣ́ти dyé^{i}tyi = *children*

Neuter nouns in -я have nominative plural in -ена, e.g. :

времена́ vremená = *times* (sc. *seasons*).

CHAPTER 10

VOCABULARY

(Where the pronunciation given differs from that laid down in Chapter 2 it is owing to laws of etymology or of colloquial use.)

Buildings, rooms, furniture, &c.

OUTSIDE

зда́ніе *n.*	zdániye	*building*
вокза́лъ *m.*	vakzál	*terminus* (or *large station*)
ста́нція *f.*	stántsiya	*small* or *country station*
тамо́жня *f.*	tamózhnya	*custom-house*
рестора́нъ *m.*	restarán	*restaurant*
буфе́тъ *m.*	bufyé^{a}t	*refreshment-room*
гости́ница *f.*	gastyínyitsa	*hotel*
больни́ца *f.*	bal'nyítsa	*hospital*
теа́тръ *m.*	tyeátr	*theatre*

дворе́цъ *m.*	dvaryé^{a}ts	*palace*
це́рковь *f.*	ts(y)é^{i}rkaf'	*church*
собо́ръ *m.*	sabór	*cathedral*
часо́вня *f.*	chasóvnya	*shrine*
ко́локолъ (-á) *m.*(*pl.*)	kólakal	(*church*) *bell*(*s*)
колоко́льня *f.*	kalakó^{i}l'nya	*belfry*
банкъ *m.*	bank	*bank*
по́чта *f.*	póchta	*post-office*
музе́й *m.*	muzyéi	*museum*
галере́я *f.*	galyeréya	*gallery*
шко́ла *f.*	shkóla	*school*
учи́лище *n.*	uchílyishche	*school*
университе́тъ *m.*	unyiversityé^{a}t	*university*
ба́ни *f. pl.*	bányi	*baths*
домъ *m.*	dom	*house*
да́ча *f.*	dácha	*country villa*
воро́та *n. pl.*	varóta	*gate*
дворъ *m.*	dvor	*court-yard*
подъ$^{\text{ѣ}}$здъ *m.*	padyé^{a}st	*front-door*
эта́жъ *m.*	etásh	*floor, story*
кварти́ра *f.*	kvartyíra	*flat*
магази́нъ *m.*	magazín	*shop*
ла́вка *f.*	láfka	*small shop*
ры́нокъ *m.*	rýnak	*market*
ряды́ *m. pl.*	ryadý	*covered rows of shops*
кофе́йная *f. adj.*	kaf(y)éinaya	*café*
конди́терская *f. adj.*	kandyítyerskaya	*confectioner's*
бу́лочная *f. adj.*	búlachnaya	*baker's*
портно́й *m. adj.*	partnói	*tailor* (sc. *his shop*)
парикма́херская *f. adj.*	parikmákherskaya	*hairdresser's*
заво́дъ *m.*	zavót	*establishment, factory*
фа́брика *f.*	fábrika	*factory*
ме́льница *f.*	myé^{i}l'nyitsa	(*water-*) *mill*
труба́ *f.*	trubá	*chimney*
забо́ръ *m.*	zabór	*fence*
ба́шня *f.*	báshnya	*tower*
коню́шня *f.*	kanyúshnya	*stables*

сара́й *m.*	sarái	*coach-house*
заста́ва *f.*	zastáva	*barrier*
кирпи́чъ *m.*	kirpích	*brick*
ка́мень *m.*	kámen'	*stone*
а́дресъ *m.*	ádres	*address*
у́лица *f.*	úlyitsa	*street*
переу́локъ *m.*	pereúlak	*short street*
на́бережная *f. adj.*	náberezhnaya	*quay*
проспе́ктъ *m.*	praspyé^{a}kt	*avenue* (*street*)
алле́я *f.*	alyéya	*avenue* (*in garden*)
шоссе́ *n. indecl.*	shos(y)é	*high-road*
пло́щадь *f.*	plóshchat'	*square*
бульва́ръ *m.*	bul'vár	*boulevard*
мостъ *m.*	most	*bridge*
мостова́я *f. adj.*	mastaváya	*paving* (*of road*)
тротуа́ръ *m.*	trotuár	*pavement* (*footway*)

Inside

звоно́къ *m.*	zvanók	*bell*
ле́стница *f.*	lyé^{i}stnyitsa	*staircase*
дверь *f.*	dv(y)é^{i}r'	*door*
ко́мната *f.*	kómnata	*room*
пере́дняя *f. adj.*	peryé^{i}dnyaya	*lobby*
се́ни *f. pl.*	syé^{i}nyi	*vestibule*
залъ *m.*	zal	*hall, waiting-room*
за́ла *f.*	zála	
столо́вая *f. adj.*	stalóvaya	*dining-room*
гости́ная *f. adj.*	gastyínaya	*drawing-room*
спа́льня *f.*	spá^{i}l'nya	*bedroom*
де́тская *f. adj.*	dyé^{a}tskaya	*nursery*
ку́хня *f.*	kúkhnya	*kitchen*
кабине́тъ *m.*	kabinyé^{a}t	*study*
библіо́тека *f.*	bibliótyeka	*library*
ва́нная *f. adj.*	vánnaya	*bath-room*
по́гребъ *m.*	pógrep	*cellar*
кладова́я *f. adj.*	kladaváya	*store-room*
черда́къ *m.*	cherdák	*lumber-room, garret*
ну́жникъ *m.*	núzhnyik	*W. C.*

окно́ *n.*	aknó	*window*
стѣна́ *f.*	styená	*wall*
полъ *m.*	pol	*floor* (sc. *of room*)
у́голъ *m.*	úgal	*corner*
потолóкъ *m.*	patalók	*ceiling*
мéбель *f.*	mé^{i}bel'	*furniture*
(печь) пéчка *f.*	p(y)é^{i}chka	*stove*
столъ *m.*	stol	*table*
пи́сьменный столъ	pís'menny stol	*writing-table*
ска́терть *m.*	skátyert'	*table-cloth*
буфéть *m.*	bufyé^{a}t	*sideboard*
стулъ *m.*	stul	*chair*
крéсло *n.*	kryé^{a}sla	*arm-chair*
дива́нъ *m.*	dyiván	*sofa*
ковёръ *m.*	kavyór	*carpet*
карти́на *f.*	kartyína	*picture*
портрéтъ *m.*	partryé^{a}t	*portrait*
(скамья́) скамéйка *f.*	skamyéika	*bench*
шкапъ, шкафъ *m.*	shkap, shkaf	*cupboard*
комóдъ *m.*	kamót	*chest of drawers*
я́щикъ *m.*	yáshchik	*drawer, box*
пóлка *f.*	pólka	*shelf*
крова́ть *f.*	kravá^{i}t'	*bedstead*
постéль *f.*	pastyé^{i}l'	*bed with bedding*
поду́шка *f.*	padúshka	*pillow, cushion*
на́волочка *f.*	návalachka	*pillow-case*
ва́нна *f.*	vánna	*small bath, tub*
зéркало *n.*	zyé^{a}rkala	*mirror*
простыня́ *f.*	prastynyá	*sheet*
одѣя́ло *n.*	adyeyála	*quilt, blanket*
тюфя́къ *m.*	tyufyák	*mattress*
умыва́льникъ *m.*	umyvá^{i}l'nyik	*wash-stand*
мы́ло *n.*	mýla	*soap*
тазъ *m.*	tas	*basin*
гу́бка *f.*	gúpka	*sponge*
кру́жка *f.*	krúshka	*jug*
полотéнце *n.*	palatyéntse	*towel*
горшóкъ *m.*	garshók	*chamber-pot*

што́ры *f. pl.*	shtóry	*blinds*
за́навѣсъ *m.*	zánav(y)es	*curtain*
ши́рмы *f. pl.*	shírmy	*screen*
часы *m. pl.*	chasý	*clock, watch*
ла́мпа *f.*	lámpa	*lamp*
абажу́ръ *m.*	abazhúr	*lamp-shade*
(свѣча́) свѣчка *f.*	svyé^{i}chka	*candle*
подсвѣчникъ *m.*	patsvyé^{i}chnyik	*candle-stick*
электри́чество *n.*	elyektríchestva	*electric light*
спи́чка *f.*	spíchka	*match*
ого́нь *m.*	agó^{i}n'	*light, fire*
фона́рь *m.*	fanái^{i}r'	*lantern*
у́голь *m.*	úgal'	*coal, charcoal*
дрова́ *n. pl.*	dravá	*wood fuel*
черни́ла *n. pl.*	chernyíla	*ink*
черни́льница *f.*	chernyílnyitsa	*ink-stand*
перо́ *n.*	p(y)eró	*pen*
ру́чка *f.*	rúchka	*handle, penholder*
каранда́шъ *m.*	karandásh	*pencil*
бума́га *f.*	bumága	*paper*
почто́вая бума́га *f.*	pachtóvaya bumága	*writing-paper*
пропускна́я бума́га *f.*	prapusknáya bumága	*blotting-paper*
промока́шка *f.*	pramakáshka	
листъ бума́ги *m.*	lyist bumági	*sheet of paper*
конве́ртъ *m.*	kanvyé^{a}rt	*envelope*
обло́жка *f.*	ablóshka	
откры́тка *f.*	atkrýtka	*post-card*
(почто́вая) ма́рка *f.*	márka	*stamp*
кни́га, кни́жка *f.*	knyíga, knyíshka	*book*
(тетра́дь) тетра́дка *f.*	tyetrátka	*note-book*
верёвочка *f.*	veryóvachka	*string*
самова́ръ *m.*	samavár	*tea-urn*
ча́йникъ *m.*	cháinyik	*tea-pot*
ча́шка *f.*	cháshka	*cup*
блю́дечко *n.*	blyúdyechka	*saucer*
стака́нъ *m.*	stakán	*tumbler*
подстака́нникъ *m.*	patstakánnyik	*tumbler-stand*
ло́жка *f.*	lóshka	*spoon*

ви́лка *f.*	vílka	*fork*
ножъ, но́жикъ *m.*	nózh(yk)	*knife*
салфе́тка *f.*	salfyé^{a}tka	*napkin*
прибо́ръ *m.*	pribór	*cover* (sc. *knife and fork*)
таре́лка *f.*	taryé^{a}lka	*plate*
кры́шка *f.*	krýshka	*lid, cover*
блю́до *n.*	blyúda	*dish*
графи́нъ *m.*	grafín	*water-bottle*
буты́лка *f.*	butýlka	*bottle*
рю́мка *f.*	ryúmka	*wine-glass*
про́бка *f.*	própka	*cork*
про́бочникъ *m.*	próbachnyik	*corkscrew*

CHAPTER 11

VOCABULARY

Travel (cf. chapters 47, 48)

грани́ца *f.*	granyítsa	*frontier*
па́спортъ *m.*	pásport	*passport*
биле́тъ *m.*	bilyé^{a}t	*ticket*
нача́й *m.*	nachái	*tip*
носи́льщикъ *m.*	nasílshchik	*porter*
чино́вникъ *m.*	chinóvnyik	*official*
полице́йскій *m. adj.*	palyitsyéiski	*police (official)*
жанда́рмъ *m.*	zhandárm	
городово́й *m. adj.*	garadavói	(*town*) *policeman*
уча́стокъ *m.*	uchástak	*police-court*
при́ставъ *m.*	prístaf	*commissary of police*
дво́рникъ *m.*	dvórnyik	*concierge*
извóщикъ *m.* (or изво́зчикъ)	izvóshchik	*cab* (*driver with carriage* or *sledge*)
шофёръ *m.*	shafyór	*chauffeur*
экипа́жъ *m.*	ekipásh	*carriage*
са́ни *f. pl.*	sányi	*sledge*
автомоби́ль *m.*	aftamabíl'	*motor-car*
таксаме́тра *f.*	taksamyé^{a}tra	*taxi*
конто́ра *f.*	kantóra	*office*

де́ньги *f. pl.*	dyé^{i}ngi	*money*
разме́нъ де́негъ *m.*	razmyé^{a}n dyé^{i}nyek	*moneychanger's*
сда́ча *f.*	sdácha	*change* (*from coin*)
ме́лочи *f. pl.*	myé^{a}lachi	*small change*
рубль *m.*	rubl' (rup)	*rouble* (=100 kopeks =2*s.*)
цѣлко́вый *m. adj.*	ts(y)elkóvy	*rouble* (colloq.)
полти́на *f.*	paltyína	½ *rouble* (=50 kopeks =1*s.*)
двугри́венникъ *m.*	dvugrívenyi̯k	20 *kopeks* (=5*d.*)
гри́венникъ *m.*	grívenyik	10 *kopeks* (=2½*d.*)
копѣ́йка *f.*	kapyéika	*kopek* (=¼*d.*)
бума́жка *f.*	bumáshka	*note*
по́ѣздъ (-á) *m.* (*pl.*)	póyezd, payezdá	*train*(*s*)
ваго́нъ *m.*	vagón	*railway-carriage*
классъ *m.*	klass	*class*
купе́ *n. indecl.*	kup(y)é	*compartment*
отдѣле́ніе *n.*	atdyelyé^{i}niye	*compartment*
коридо́ръ *m.*	karidór	*corridor*
конду́кторъ *m.*	kandúktar	*guard*
убо́рная *f. adj.*	ubórnaya	*toilet*
отопле́ніе *n.*	ataplyé^{i}niye	*heating*
освѣще́ніе *n.*	asvyeshché^{i}niye	*lighting*
спа́льный ваго́нъ *m.*	spá^{i}l'ny vagón	*sleeping-car*
посте́ль *f.*	pastyé^{i}l'	*bedding*
ваго́нъ-рестора́нъ *m.*	vagón-restarán	*dining-car*
платфо́рма *f.*	platfórma	*platform*
бага́жъ *m.*	bagásh	*luggage*
гардеро́бъ *m.*	garderóp	*cloak-room*
ка́сса *f.*	kássa	*ticket-office*
квита́нція *f.*	kvitántsiya	*receipt*
ключъ *m.*	klyuch	*key*
доро́га *f.*	daróga	*road*
желѣ́зная д. *f.*	zhelyé^{a}znaya d.	*railroad* (lit. *iron*)
путь *m.*	put'	*way, means*
трамва́й *m.*	tramvái	*tram*
колесо́ *n.*	kalyesó	*wheel*
вещь *f.*	vyé^{i}shch	*thing*

цѣна́ *f.*	ts(y)ená	*price*
счётъ *m.*	schot	*bill*
ито́гъ *m.*	itók	*total*
но́меръ (-á) *m.* (*pl.*)	nóm(y)er	*number* (e. g. *of room, ticket,* or *newspaper*), often = *room*
вѣсъ *m.*	vyé^{a}s	*weight*
фунтъ *m.*	funt	*pound* (weight)
пудъ *m.*	put	*pud*, 40 *Russian lbs.*
верста́ *f.*	v(y)erstá	*verst*, $\frac{2}{3}$ *of a mile*
са́жень *f.*	sázhen'	*fathom*
футъ *m.*	fut	*foot* (measure)
нача́ло *n.*	nachála	*beginning*
середи́на *f.*	seredyína	*middle*
коне́цъ *m.*	kanyé^{a}ts	*end*
зо́лото *n.*	zólata	*gold*
серебро́ *n.*	serebró	*silver*
мѣдь *f.*	myé^{i}t'	*copper*
желѣзо *n.*	zhelyé^{a}za	*iron*
сталь *f.*	stá^{i}l'	*steel*
при́стань *f.*	prístan'	*landing-stage*
купа́льня *f.*	kupá^{i}l'nya	*bathing place*
парохо́дъ *m.*	parakhót	*steamer*
ло́дка *f.*	lótka	*rowing boat*
каю́та *f.*	kayúta	*cabin*
па́луба *f.*	páluba	*deck*
мо́ре *n.*	mórye	*sea*
о́зеро *n.*	óz(y)era	*lake*
рѣка́ *f.*	r(y)eká	*river*
о́стровъ (-á) *m.* (*pl.*)	óstraf, astravá	*island(s)*
гора́ *f.*, го́ры *pl.*	gará, góry	*hill(s), mountain(s)*
лѣсъ (-á) *m.* (*pl.*)	lyé^{a}s, lyesá	*forest(s)*
по́ле *n.*	pólye	*field, open country*
лугъ *m.*	luk	*meadow*
степь *f.*	styé^{i}p'	*steppe*
бе́регъ (-á) *m.* (*pl.*)	b(y)é^{i}rek	*shore(s), bank(s)*
зали́въ *m.*	zalyíf	*gulf*
видъ *m*	vit	*view*

го́родъ (-á) *m.* (*pl.*)	górat	*town(s)*
столи́ца *f.*	stalyítsa	*capital*
мѣ́сто *n.*	myé^{a}sta	*place* (cf. pp. 67, 112)
край *m.*	krai	*region*
страна́ *f.*	straná	*country*
губе́рнія *f.*	gub(y)é^{i}rniya	*province*
о́бласть *f.*	óblast'	*province*
уѣ́здъ *m.*	uyé^{a}zd	*district*
сторона́ *f.*	staraná	*side*
наро́дъ *m.*	narót	*people*
село́ *n.*	s(y)eló	*village*
дере́вня *f.*	dyer(y)é^{i}vnya	*hamlet, 'the country'*
имѣ́ніе *n.*	imyé^{i}niye	*property*
телегра́фъ *m.*	tyelyegráf	*telegraph office*
телефо́нъ *m.*	tyelyefón	*telephone*
телегра́мма *f.*	tyelyegrámma	*telegram*
письмо́ *n.*	pis'mó	*letter*
дѣ́ло *n.*	dyé^{a}la	*business, affair*
рабо́та *f.*	rabóta	*work*
слу́чай *m.*	slúchai	*incident*
обы́чай *m.*	abýchai	*custom* (sc. *habit*)

CHAPTER 12

VOCABULARY

Time, weather, &c.

вре́мя *n.*	vr(y)é^{i}mya	*time*
пора́ *f.*	pará	*(it is) time*
разъ *m.*	ras	*a time*
годъ *m.*	got	*year*
мѣ́сяцъ *m.*	myé^{i}syats	*month, moon*
недѣ́ля *f.*	nyedyé^{i}lya	*week*
день *m.*	dyé^{i}n'	*day*
су́тки *f. pl.*	sútki	*24 hours*
ночь *f.*	nó^{i}ch'	*night*

у́тро *n.*	útra	*morning*
ве́черъ *m.*	v(y)é^{i}cher	*evening*
заря́ *f.*	zaryá	*dawn*
часъ *m.*	chas	*hour*
часы́ *m. pl.*	chasý	*watch, clock* (and *hours*)
мину́та *f.*	minúta	*minute*
янва́рь *m.*	yanvá^{i}r'	*January*
февра́ль *m.*	fevrá^{i}l'	*February*
мартъ *m.*	mart	*March*
апрѣ́ль *m.*	apr(y)é^{i}l'	*April*
май *m.*	mai	*May*
ію́нь *m.*	iyún'	*June*
ію́ль *m.*	iyúl'	*July*
а́вгустъ *m.*	ávgust	*August*
сентя́брь *m.*	s(y)entyá^{i}br'	*September*
октя́брь *m.*	aktyá^{i}br'	*October*
ноя́брь *m.*	nayá^{i}br'	*November*
дека́брь *m.*	dyeká^{i}br'	*December*
Воскресе́нье *n.*	vaskres(y)é^{i}nye	*Sunday*
понедѣ́льникъ *m.*	panyedyé^{i}lnik	*Monday*
вто́рникъ *m.*	ftórnyik	*Tuesday*
среда́ *f.*	sredá	*Wednesday*
четве́ргъ *m.*	chetv(y)é^{i}rk	*Thursday*
пя́тница *f.*	pyátnyitsa	*Friday*
суббо́та *f.*	subóta	*Saturday*
пра́здникъ *m.*	prázdnyik	*holiday, festival*
весна́ *f.*	v(y)esná	*spring*
лѣ́то *n.*	lyé^{a}ta	*summer* (and *year*)
о́сень *f.*	ós(y)en'	*autumn*
зима́ *f.*	zimá	*winter*
пого́да *f.*	pagóda	*weather*
дождь *m.*	dó^{i}sht'	*rain*
снѣгъ *m.*	snyé^{a}k	*snow*
моро́зъ *m.*	marós	*frost*
о́ттепель *f.*	óttyepel'	*thaw*
сля́коть *f.*	slyákat'	*slush*
грязь *f.*	gryá^{i}s'	*mud*
пыль *f.*	pyl'	*dust*

вѣ́теръ *m.*	v(y)é^{i}tyer	*wind*
тума́нъ *m.*	tumán	*fog*
со́лнце *n.*	sóntse (л is mute)	*sun*
луна́ *f.*	luná	*moon*
звѣзда́ (*pl.* звѣ́зды) *f.*	zv(y)ezdá, zvyózdy	*star(s)*
свѣ́тъ *m.*	svyé^{a}t	*light, world*
міръ *m.*	mir	*world, community*
земля́ *f.*	zemlyá	*earth*
темнота́ *f.*	tyemnatá	*darkness*
не́бо *n.*	nyé^{a}ba	*sky, heaven*
о́блако *n.*	óblaka	*cloud*
ту́ча *f.*	túcha	*cloud*

CHAPTER 13

VOCABULARY

Points of the compass and names of countries, nationalities, towns, rivers and personal names

сѣ́веръ	s(y)é^{i}ver	*North*
югъ	yuk	*South*
восто́къ	vastók	*East*
за́падъ	zápat	*West*
сѣ́верный	s(y)é^{i}verny	*Northern*
ю́жный	yúzhny	*Southern*
восто́чный	vastóchny	*Eastern*
за́падный	západny	*Western*
центра́льный	tsentrá^{i}l'ny	*Central*
Евро́па	yevrópa	*Europe*
А́зія	áziya	*Asia*
А́фрика	áfrika	*Africa*
Австра́лія	afstráliya	*Australia*
Аме́рика	am(y)é^{i}rika	*America*

Áвстрія	áfstriya	*Austria*
Áнглія	ángliya	*England*
Бéльгія	b(y)éˈlgiya	*Belgium*
Болгáрія	balgáriya	*Bulgaria*
Вéнгрія	v(y)éˈngriya	*Hungary*
Гермáнія	g(y)ermániya	*Germany*
Голлáндія	gallándiya	*Holland*
Грéція	gr(y)éˈtsiya	*Greece*
Дáнія	dániya	*Denmark*
Ирлáндія	irlándiya	*Ireland*
Испáнія	ispániya	*Spain*
Итáлія	itáliya	*Italy*
Китáй	kitái	*China*
Норвéгія	narv(y)éˈgiya	*Norway*
Россíя	rassíya	*Russia*
Румы́нія	rumýniya	*Roumania*
Сéрбія	s(y)éˈrbiya	*Serbia*
Соединённые Штáты	sayedinyóny-yeshtáty	*United States*
Тýрція	túrtsiya	*Turkey*
Финлáндія	finlyándiya	*Finland*
Фрáнція	frántsiya	*France*
Черногóрія	chernagóriya	*Montenegro*
Швейцáрія	shveitsáriya	*Switzerland*
Швéція	shv(y)éˈtsiya	*Sweden*
Шотлáндія	shatlándiya	*Scotland*
Япóнія	yapóniya	*Japan*

MASC.	FEM.	
австрíецъ	австрíйка	*Austrian*
америкáнецъ	америкáнка	*American*
англичáнинъ	англичáнка	*Englishman, -woman*
армянúнъ	армя́нка	*Armenian*
бельгíецъ	бельгíйка	*Belgian*
болгáринъ	болгáрка	*Bulgarian*
венгéрецъ	венгéрка	*Hungarian*
грекъ	гречáнка	*Greek*
грузúнецъ	грузúнка	*Georgian*

голла́ндецъ	голла́ндка	*Dutchman*
датча́нинъ	датча́нка	*Dane*
евре́й	евре́йка	*Jew*
ирла́ндецъ	ирла́ндка	*Irishman*
испа́нецъ	испа́нка	*Spaniard*
италья́нецъ	италья́нка	*Italian*
кита́ецъ	кита́янка	*Chinaman*
норве́жецъ	норве́жка	*Norwegian*
нѣ́мецъ	нѣ́мка	*German*
поля́къ	по́лька	*Pole*
ру́сскій (*adj.*)	ру́сская (*adj.*)	*Russian*
сербъ	сербія́нка	*Serb*
тата́ринъ	тата́рка	*Tartar*
ту́рокъ	турча́нка	*Turk*
францу́зъ	францу́женка	*Frenchman*
финля́ндецъ	финля́ндка	*Finn*
черногоре́цъ	черногорка	*Montenegrin*
черке́съ	черке́ска	*Circassian*
чехъ	че́шка	*Chekh, Bohemian*
швейца́рецъ	швейца́рка	*Swiss*
шведъ	шве́дка	*Swede*
шотла́ндецъ	шотла́ндка	*Scot*
япо́нецъ	япо́нка	*Japanese*

англича́не	англича́нки	PLURALS
нѣ́мцы	нѣ́мки	
се́рбы	сербія́нки	
францу́зы	францу́женки	
ру́сскіе (*adj.*)	ру́сскія (*adj.*)	
поля́ки	по́льки	
ту́рки	турча́нки	
евре́и	евре́йки	
тата́ры	тата́рки	

христія́нинъ	*pl.* христія́не	*Christian*
язы́чникъ	*pl.* язы́чники	*heathen*
православ́ный	*pl.* православ́ные	*Orthodox*
като́ликъ	*pl.* като́лики	*Roman Catholic*

Towns, rivers, &c.

MASC.		
Берли́нъ	berlyín	*Berlin*
Бѣлгра́дъ	b(y)elgrát	*Belgrade*
Днѣпръ	dnyé^{a}pr	*Dnieper*
Кавка́зъ	kafkás	*Caucasus*
Кэ́мбриджъ	—	*Cambridge*
Кіевъ	kíyef	*Kiev*
Крымъ	krym	*Crimea*
Ло́ндонъ	—	*London*
Нью-Іоркъ	—	*New York*
О́ксфордъ	—	*Oxford*
Пари́жъ	parísh	*Paris*
Петрогра́дъ	p(y)etragrát	*Petrograd*
Римъ	rim	*Rome*
Росто́въ	rastóf	*Rostov*
Ха́рьковъ	há^{i}rkaf	*Harkov*
Севасто́поль	sevastópal'	*Sebastopol*
Ярославль	yaraslávl'	*Yaroslav*
FEM.		
Аѳи́ны *pl.*	afíny	*Athens*
Варша́ва	varsháva	*Warsaw*
Во́лга	vólga	*Volga*
Вѣ́на	vyé^{a}na	*Vienna*
Москва́	maskvá	*Moscow*
Нева́	nyevá	*Neva*
Оде́сса	adyé^{a}sa	*Odessa*
Ри́га	ríga	*Riga*
Те́мза	tyé^{a}mza	*Thames*
Я́лта	yálta	*Yalta*
А́страхань	ástrakhan'	*Astrakhan*
Каза́нь	kazá^{i}n'	*Kazan*
Обь	ó^{i}p'	*Obi*
Ряза́нь	ryazá^{i}n'	*Ryazan*
Сиби́рь	sibir'	*Siberia*
Тверь	tv(y)é^{i}r'	*Tver*

Christian Names

Алексáндръ	alyeksándr	*Alexander*
Алексѣ́й	alyeksyéi	*Alexis*
Васи́лій	vasílyi	*Basil*
Влади́міръ	vladyímir	*Vladimir*
Геóргій	g(y)eórgi	
Егóръ	yegór	*George*
Ю́рій	yúri	
Ива́нъ	iván	*John*
Михаи́лъ	mikhayíl	*Michael*
Никола́й	nyikalái	*Nicholas*
Па́велъ	páv(y)el	*Paul*
Пётръ	pyotr	*Peter*
Сергѣ́й	s(y)ergyéi	*Sergius*
Ѳёдоръ (or Ѳеóдоръ)	fyódar	*Theodore*

(For the diminutives of these names cf. p. 33.)

Алексáндра	alyeksándra	*Alexandra*
А́нна	ánna	*Anne*
Екатери́на	yekatyerína	*Catherine*
Еле́на	yelyé^{a}na	*Helen*
Елизаве́та	yelyizavyé^{a}ta	*Elizabeth*
Ма́рія	máriya	*Mary*
Со́фія	sófiya	*Sophia*
Татіа́на	tatiyána	*Tatiana*

And the very common diminutives:

Анюта	anyúta	*Anne*
Ка́тя	kátya	*Catherine*
Ле́ночка	lyé^{a}nachka	*Helen*
Ли́за	lyíza	*Elizabeth*
Ма́ша	másha	*Mary*
Са́шенька	sáshenka	*Alexandra*
Со́ня	sónya	*Sophia*
Та́ня	tánya	*Tatiana*

Patronymic

Алекса́ндровичъ	alyeksándravich	*Alexander's son*
Алексѣевичъ	alyeksyéyevich	*Alexis' son*
Васи́лiевичъ	vasíliyevich	*Basil's son*
Влади́мiровичъ	vladyímiravich	*Vladimir's son*
Гео́ргiевичъ	g(y)eórgiyevich	*George's son*
or Его́ровичъ	yegóravich	
or Ю́рьевичъ	yúriyevich	
Ива́новичъ	ivánavich	*John's son*
or Ива́нычъ	iványch	
Михаи́ловичъ	mikhayílavich	*Michael's son*
or Михаи́лычъ	mikháilych	
Никола́евичъ	nyikaláyevich	*Nicholas' son*
or Никола́ичъ	nyikaláyich	
Па́вловичъ	pávlavich	*Paul's son*
Петро́вичъ	petróvich	*Peter's son*
Сергѣевичъ	s(y)ergyéyevich	*Sergius' son*
or Сергѣичъ	s(y)ergyéyich	
Ѳёдоровичъ	fyódaravich	*Theodore's son*

Алекса́ндровна	*Alexander's daughter*
Алексѣевна	*Alexis' daughter*
Васи́лiевна	*Basil's daughter*
Влади́мiровна	*Vladimir's daughter*
Гео́ргiевна, &c.	*George's daughter*
Ива́новна	*John's daughter*
Михаи́ловна	*Michael's daughter*
Никола́евна	*Nicholas' daughter*
Па́вловна	*Paul's daughter*
Петро́вна	*Peter's daughter*
Сергѣевна	*Sergius' daughter*
Ѳёдоровна	*Theodore's daughter*

In ordinarily rapid speech the patronymics both *masc.* and *fem.* are always curtailed, the syllable -ов-, -ев- being usually inaudible except when accented, as Петро́вичъ.

Surnames

	MASC.	
Лéрмонтовъ	lyé^{a}rmantaf	*Lérmontov*
Соловьёвъ	salavyóf	*Solovév*
Турге́невъ	turg(y)é^{i}nyef	*Turgénev*
Пу́шкинъ	púshkin	*Púshkín*
	FEM.	
Па́влова	pávlova	*Pávlova*
Арсе́ньева	ars(y)é^{i}nyeva	*Arséneva*
Карса́вина	karsávina	*Karsávina*

Note on the use of personal names in Russian

Russians possess three names :

1. The Christian name (и́мя, *neut.*).
2. The Patronymic (о́тчество).
3. The Surname (фами́лія).

The patronymic always varies according to gender, and in almost all cases the surname does also. If a man's name is Ива́нъ, his father's name Пётръ, and his surname Арсе́ньевъ, then his full name will be :

Ива́нъ Петро́вичъ Арсе́ньевъ.

If his wife's name is А́нна, and her father's name was Па́велъ, her name will be :

А́нна Па́вловна Арсе́ньева.

Together they are Арсе́ньевы.

Their son will be Ива́новичъ, e.g. :

Серге́й Ива́новичъ Арсе́ньевъ,

and their daughter Ива́новна, e.g. :

Ма́рія Ива́новна Арсе́ньева.

Russians call each other, unless they are relations or intimate friends, by the Christian name and the patronymic.

CHAPTER 14

THE NOMINATIVE

Pronouns

All the essential pronouns are given in the following list, in the nominative singular and nominative plural, with the pronunciation :

я	ya	=*I*
ты	ty	=*thou*
онъ	on	=*he*
онó	anó	=*it*
онá	aná	=*she*
мы	my	=*we*
вы	vy	=*you*
онú	anyí	=*they* (masc. and neut.)
онѣ	anyé	=*they* (fem.)

	SINGULAR		PLURAL		
Masc.	мой	moi	мои́	mayí	=*my*
Neut.	моё	mayó			
Fem.	моя́	mayá			
Masc.	твой	tvoi	твои́	tvayí	=*thy*
Neut.	твоё	tvayó			
Fem.	твоя́	tvayá			
Masc.	нашъ	nash	на́ши	náshy	=*our*
Neut.	на́ше	náshe			
Fem.	на́ша	násha			

	SINGULAR		PLURAL		
Masc.	ва́шъ	vash	ва́ши	váshy	= *your*
Neut.	ва́ше	váshe			
Fem.	ва́ша	vásha			

Masc.	свой	svoi	свои́	svayí	= *one's own* [1]
Neut.	своё	svayó			
Fem.	своя́	svayá			

Masc. Fem.	кто	khto (cf. p. 7)	= *who*
Neut.	что	shto (cf. p. 13)	= *what*

(the plural of these is supplied by кото́рый = *which*, cf. p. 82)

	SINGULAR		PLURAL		
Masc.	чей	chéi	чьи	chyí	= *whose*
Neut.	чьё	chyó			
Fem.	чья	chyá			

Masc.	оди́нъ	adyín	одни́	adnyí	= *one, alone, only, some*
Neut.	одно́	adnó			
Fem.	одна́	adná	однѣ́	adnyé	

Masc.	самъ	sam	са́ми	sámi	= *self, selves*
Neut.	само́	samó			
Fem.	сама́	samá			

[1] This pronoun is always used with reference to the subject of the sentence; it may mean *my own, thy own, his own, her own, our own, your own,* or *their own*; for the ordinary words for *his, her,* and *their* see p. 105.

	SINGULAR		PLURAL		
Masc.	э́тотъ	é^{a}tot	э́ти	é^{i}tyi	= *this*, or *that* / *these*, or *those* / *the latter*
Neut.	э́то	é^{a}ta			
Fem.	э́та	é^{a}ta			
Masc.	тотъ	tot	тѣ	tyé	= *that yonder* / *those yonder* / *the former*
Neut.	то	to			
Fem.	та	ta			
Masc.	весь	vyé^{i}s	всѣ	fsyé	= *the whole* / *all*
Neut.	всё [1]	fsyó			
Fem.	вся	fsyá			

CHAPTER 15

VOCABULARY OF WORDS DENOTING MALE AND FEMALE BEINGS

оте́цъ	atyé^{a}ts	*father*
ба́тюшка [2]	bátyushka	
па́па, папа́ша		
мать	ma^{i}t'	*mother*
ма́тушка	mátushka	
ма́ма, мама́ша		

Оте́цъ and мать are the formal words for *father* and *mother*; they are used in literature, in narration, and in conversation by younger people to older.

[1] This word is very often used adverbially with the meaning *continually, nothing but, keeps on. . . .*

[2] The plurals ба́тюшки and ма́тушки are only used as exclamations of intense surprise or horror.

Ба́тюшка and ма́тушка are used by older people to younger, in addressing peasants and people of the working class, and by these latter in addressing educated people; the former is also used in addressing priests.

The four last names are those most used by children of and to their parents and by grown-up strangers to children of their parents.

роди́тели	radyítyelyi	*parents*
дѣдъ	dyé^{a}t	*grandfather*
дѣ́душка	dyé^{a}dushka	
ба́бушка	bábushka	*grandmother*
сынъ	syn	*son*
сыно́къ (dim.)	synók	
дочь	dó^{i}ch’	*daughter*
до́чка (dim.)	dóchka	

До́чка is much more frequently used than сыно́къ; до́чка is the ordinary word for *daughter*, and сынъ for *son*.

внукъ	vnuk	*grandson*
вну́чекъ (dim.)	vnúchek	
вну́чка	vnúchka	*granddaughter*
братъ	brat	*brother*
сестра́	s(y)estrá	*sister*
дя́дя	dyádya	*uncle*
тётя	tyótya	*aunt*
дитя́	dyityá	*child*
дѣти	dyé^{i}tyi	*children*
ребёнокъ	rebyónak	*child*
ребя́та	rebyáta	*children*

In ordinary conversation ребёнокъ and дѣти are most often used for *child* and *children*; дитя́ is common in literature; ребя́та is very commonly used in the non-literal sense, as '*boys*' in English, e.g. amongst soldiers.

Дитя́ is always neuter and ребёнокъ always masculine whatever the sex of the child.

мужъ	muzh	*husband*
супру́гъ	suprúk	
жена́	zhená	*wife*
супру́га	suprúga	

Супру́гъ and супру́га are the terms of polite reference most often used amongst friends and acquaintances after the pronoun *your*; мужъ and жена́ are those used amongst relations, and otherwise always when referring to people not actually present.

жени́хъ	zhenyíkh	*fiancé*
невѣ́ста	nyevyé^{a}sta	*fiancée*
другъ	druk	*friend* (masc. or fem.)
това́рищъ	tavárishch	*companion* (masc.)

Другъ can refer to either sex; there is a word подру́га for female friend, but it means rather a *girl-companion*; if a specifically male or female friend is indicated the following words must be used:

прія́тель	priyátyel'	*friend* (masc.)
прія́тельница	priyátyelnyitsa	*friend* (fem.)

учи́тель	uchítyel'	*teacher* (masc.)
учи́тельница	uchítyelnyitsa	*teacher* (fem.)
ученикъ	uchenyík	*pupil* (masc.)
учени́ца	uchenyítsa	*pupil* (fem.)
господи́нъ	gaspadyín	*Mr., gentleman*
госпожа́	gaspazhá	*Mrs., Miss*
да́ма	dáma	*lady*
господа́ *pl.*	gaspadá	*Messrs.* or *Mr. and Mrs.*
ба́ринъ	bárin	*the gentleman, the master*
ба́рыня	bárynya	*the lady, the mistress*
ба́рышня	báryshnya	*the young lady*
слуга́	slugá	*male servant*
прислу́га	prislúga	*female servant*
го́рничная *adj.*	górnyichnaya	*maid*
хозя́инъ	(k)hazyáyin	*host, master*
хозя́йка	(k)hazyáika	*hostess, mistress*
хозя́ева *pl.*	(k)hazyáyeva	*host and hostess*
попъ [1]	pop	*priest*
попадья́ [1]	papadyá	*priest's wife*
царь	tsá^{i}r'	*tsar*
цари́ца	tsarítsa	*tsaritsa*
цесаре́вичъ	tsesar(y)évich	*tsesarévich (eldest son, Crown Prince)*
царе́вичъ	tsar(y)évich	*tsarévich (any other son of Tsar)*

[1] More respectfully: священникъ (svyashchényik) and жена́ священника.

Госуда́рь [1]	gasudá^{i}r'	*the Sovereign, the Tsar*
Госуда́рыня [1]	gasudárynya	*the Sovereign, the Tsaritsa*
Импера́торъ	imperátor	*the Emperor*
Императри́ца	imperatrítsa	*the Empress*
Наслѣ́дникъ	naslyé^{i}dnyik	*the Heir-Apparent*
коро́ль	karó^{i}l'	*king*
короле́ва	karalyé^{a}va	*queen*
князь	knyá^{i}s'	*Prince*
княги́ня	knyaghínya	*Princess* (wife)
княжна́	knyazhná	*Princess* (daughter)
Вели́кій Князь	velyíki k.	*Grand Duke*
Вели́кая Княги́ня	velyíkaya k.	*Grand Duchess*
графъ	graf	*Count*
граф́ня	grafínya	*Countess*
ма́льчикъ	má^{i}l'chik	*boy*
па́рень	páren'	*lad*
человѣ́къ	chelavyé^{a}k	*man*
стари́къ	starík	*old man*
дѣ́вочка	dyé^{a}vachka	*little girl* (till about 13)
дѣ́вушка	dyé^{a}vushka	*girl* (from 13 till about 25)
дѣви́ца	dyevítsa	*spinster*
же́нщина	zhénshchina	*woman*
стару́ха	starúkha	*old woman*

[1] су́дарь and судáрыня are the old words for *Sir* and *Madam*.

Человѣкъ is the ordinary word for *man*, but its real meaning is *human being*, and thus it can also be used with reference to women, e.g. :

она́ несча́стный человѣкъ
she is an unfortunate person.

The plural of человѣкъ is лю́ди, which includes both men and women. Человѣкъ is also used for *waiter*. Же́нщина is the ordinary word for *woman*. Муще́ина (also spelt мужчи́на) is the specific word for *man* as opposed to *woman*.

Мужи́къ = *a male peasant*, ба́ба = *a female peasant*.

Ба́бы is colloquially used for *womenfolk*. Other equally common and rather more respectful terms for the peasants are :

крестья́нинъ = *peasant man*
крестья́нка = *peasant woman*
крестья́не = *peasants*.

CHAPTER 16

EXAMPLES OF PRONOUNS USED IN AGREEMENT WITH NOUNS

мой оте́цъ = *my father*
моя́ мать = *my mother*
мои́ роди́тели = *my parents*

ва́шъ ба́тюшка = *your father*
ва́ша ма́тушка = *your mother*
ва́ши дѣти = *your children*

нашъ сынъ	= *our son*
на́ша до́чка	= *our daughter*
на́ши дѣ́ти	= *our children*
твой братъ	= *thy brother*
твоя́ сестра́	= *thy sister*
твои́ роди́тели	= *thy parents*

Obs. твой is used in the same way as ты: cf. p. 17.

N.B. The words мой and твой are diphthongs pronounced *moi* and *tvoi*; the words мои́ and твои́ are each of two syllables and are pronounced *ma-yí, tva-yí.*

какъ ва́ши роди́тели?	= *how are your parents?*
они́ здоро́вы	= *they are well*
какъ вашъ братъ?	= *how is your brother?*
онъ здоро́въ	= *he is well*
какъ ва́ша до́чка?	= *how is your daughter?*
она́ здоро́ва	= *she is well*
какъ твои́ дѣ́ти?	= *how are thy children?*
они́ больны́	= *they are ill*
какъ твой сынъ?	= *how is thy son?*
онъ бо́ленъ	= *he is ill*
какъ твоя́ до́чка?	= *how is thy daughter?*
она́ больна́	= *she is ill*
мой дѣ́душка о́чень бо́ленъ	= *my grandfather is very ill*
моя́ ба́бушка о́чень больна́	= *my grandmother is very ill*
вашъ ба́тюшка нездоро́въ?	= *is your father unwell?*
ва́ша ма́тушка нездоро́ва?	= *is your mother unwell?*
твой па́па дово́ленъ?	= *is thy father pleased?*
твоя́ ма́ма дово́льна?	= *is thy mother pleased?*
мои́ роди́тели о́чень дово́льны	= *my parents are very much pleased*

ва́ши дѣти о́чень сча́стливы	=*your children are very happy*
твои́ роди́тели о́чень недово́льны	=*thy parents are much annoyed*
мой дя́дя здѣсь	=*my uncle is here*
моя́ тётя тамъ	=*my aunt is there*
гдѣ ва́ши роди́тели ?	=*where are your parents ?*
мои́ роди́тели до́ма	=*my parents are at home*
вотъ на́ши дѣти	=*here are our children*
вотъ мой сынъ	=*here is my son*
вотъ моя́ до́чка	=*here is my daughter*
вотъ мой жени́хъ	=*here is my fiancé*
вотъ моя́ невѣста	=*here is my fiancée*
гдѣ вашъ супру́гъ ?	=*where is your husband ?*
мой мужъ тутъ	=*my husband is here*
гдѣ ва́ша супру́га ?	=*where is your wife ?*
моя́ жена́ до́ма	=*my wife is at home*
э́то мой внукъ	=*this is my grandson*
э́то моя́ вну́чка	=*this is my granddaughter*
э́то мои́ дѣти	=*these are my children*
гдѣ вашъ домъ ?	=*where is your house ?*
гдѣ домъ ?	=*where is the house ?*
вотъ домъ	=*there is (here is) the house*
вотъ нашъ домъ	=*there is (here is) our house*
э́то вашъ домъ ?	=*is this your house ?*
да, э́то мой домъ	=*yes, that is my house*
нѣтъ, э́то не мой домъ	=*no, that is not my house*
какъ вашъ а́дресъ ?	=*what* (lit. *how*) *is your address ?*
вотъ мой а́дресъ	=*this is my address*

моё мѣ́сто	= *my place*
твоё мѣ́сто	= *thy place*
на́ше имѣ́ніе	= *our property*
ва́ше мѣ́сто	= *your place*
на́ши мѣста́	= *our places*
ва́ши мѣста́	= *your places*
весь домъ	= *the whole house*
весь го́родъ	= *the whole town*
вся у́лица	= *the whole street*
вся кварти́ра	= *the whole flat*
вся дере́вня	= *the whole hamlet*
всё село́	= *the whole village*
всё по́ле	= *the whole field*
всѣ извóщики	= *all the cabs*
всѣ дома́	= *all the houses*
всѣ города́	= *all the towns*
всѣ у́лицы	= *all the streets*
всѣ кварти́ры	= *all the flats*
всѣ дере́вни	= *all the hamlets*
всѣ мѣста́	= *all the places*
всѣ сёла	= *all the villages*
всѣ поля́	= *all the fields*
э́тотъ домъ	= *this house*
э́тотъ человѣ́къ	= *this man*
э́тотъ господи́нъ	= *this gentleman*
э́та же́нщина	= *this woman*
э́та да́ма	= *this lady*
э́та ба́рышня	= *this young lady*
э́то мѣ́сто	= *this place*
э́тотъ ма́льчикъ	= *this boy*

э́тотъ ребёнокъ	= *this child*
э́та дѣ́вочка	= *this little girl*
э́та дѣ́вушка	= *this girl*
э́то дитя́	= *this child*
э́ти дома́	= *these houses*
э́ти дѣ́ти	= *these children*
э́ти мѣ́ста́	= *these places*
э́ти лю́ди	= *these people*
э́ти ма́льчики	= *these boys*
э́ти дѣ́вочки	= *these little girls*
э́ти дѣ́вушки	= *these girls*
э́ти же́нщины	= *these women*
э́тотъ мущи́на	= *this man*
э́ти мущи́ны	= *these men*
э́тотъ мужи́къ	= *this peasant man*
э́ти мужики́	= *these peasant men*
э́та ба́ба	= *this peasant woman*
э́ти ба́бы	= *these peasant women*
э́ти господа́	= *these gentlemen* (or *ladies and gentlemen*)
э́ти да́мы	= *these ladies*
э́ти ба́рышни	= *these young ladies*
тотъ домъ	= *that house yonder* (or *that other*)
та у́лица	= *that street yonder, that other street*
то мѣ́сто	= *that place yonder*
э́тотъ го́родъ	= *this town*
э́та кварти́ра	= *this flat*
э́то мѣ́сто	= *this place*
э́ти дома́	= *these houses*

тѣ́ дома́ = *those houses yonder*
э́ти дере́вни = *these hamlets*
тѣ́ дере́вни = *those other hamlets*
э́ти мѣ́ста́ = *these places*
тѣ́ мѣ́ста́ = *those other places*

весь э́тотъ домъ нашъ = *all this house is ours*
всѣ́ э́ти дѣ́ти мои́ = *all these children are mine*
вся на́ша кварти́ра = *the whole of our flat*
они́ всѣ́ здоро́вы = *they are all well*
всё э́то мѣ́сто = *the whole of this place*
всѣ́ э́ти лю́ди больны́ = *all these people are ill*
э́та кварти́ра моя́ = *this flat is mine*
э́то моя́ кварти́ра = *this is my flat*
э́ти мѣ́ста́ на́ши = *these places are ours*
э́то на́ши мѣ́ста́ = *these are our places*
вотъ ва́ша ко́мната = *this is your room*
э́то моя́ ко́мната = *this is my room*

чей э́тотъ домъ? } = *whose house is this?*
or э́то чей домъ? }
э́то мой домъ = *this is my house*
э́тотъ домъ мой = *this house is mine*
чья э́та кварти́ра? } = *whose flat is this?*
or э́то чья кварти́ра? }
чьё э́то мѣ́сто? } = *whose place is this?*
or э́то чьё мѣ́сто? }

Obs. мѣ́сто never means *property*, but always a *locality* or a *seat* in the theatre, train, &c., also a *piece* of luggage.

чьи э́ти де́ньги? *or* э́то чьи де́ньги?	= *whose money is this?*
э́то мои́ де́ньги	= *that is my money*
э́ти де́ньги мои́	= *that money is mine*
всѣ на́ши де́ньги	= *all our money*
э́ти де́ньги на́ши, а тѣ ва́ши	= *this money is ours, and that over there is yours*
всѣ э́ти де́ньги ва́ши	= *all this money is yours*
гдѣ де́ньги?	= *where is the money?*
вотъ де́ньги	= *here is the money*

Obs. Де́ньги is a feminine nominative plural; the singular де́ньга is the name of a coin now obsolete.

я самъ	= *I myself* (masc.)
я сама́	= *I myself* (fem.)
ты самъ	= *thou thyself* (masc.)
ты сама́	= *thou thyself* (fem.)
онъ самъ	= *he himself*
она́ сама́	= *she herself*
мѣ́сто само́ *or* само́ мѣ́сто	= *the place itself* (neut.)
мы са́ми	= *we ourselves* (masc. and fem.)
вы са́ми	= *you yourselves* (masc. and fem.)
они́ са́ми	= *they themselves* (masc. and neut.)
онѣ́ са́ми	= *they themselves* (fem.)
я оди́нъ	= *I am alone* (masc.)
я одна́	= *I am alone* (fem.)
ты оди́нъ?	= *art thou alone?* (masc.)
ты одна́?	= *art thou alone?* (fem.)
онъ оди́нъ	= *he is alone*

она́ одна́	= *she is alone*
мы одни́	= *we are alone* (masc. or masc. and fem.)
вы одни́ ?	= *are you alone ?*
они́ одни́	= *they are alone*
вы одне́ ?	= *are you alone ?* (fem.)
они́ одне́	= *they are alone* (fem.)

Obs. In all these cases оди́нъ, &c., can also mean *only*:

я оди́нъ
or оди́нъ я } = *I alone, only I*

одни́ ма́льчики	= *only boys, some boys*
одне́ де́вочки	= *only girls, some girls*
ма́льчики одни́	= *the boys are alone*
де́вочки одне́	= *the little girls are alone*
оди́нъ челове́къ	= (1) *one man* (2) *a certain man*
одна́ же́нщина	= (1) *one woman* (2) *a certain woman*
одно́ ме́сто	= (1) *one place* (2) *a certain place*
одни́ лю́ди	= *some people*
одни́ ме́ста́	= *some places*
оди́нъ чемода́нъ	= *one trunk*
оди́нъ день	= *one day*
оди́нъ рубль	= *one rouble*
одна́ ло́шадь	= *one horse*
одна́ копе́йка	= *one kopek*
одна́ ко́мната	= *one room*

одна́ крова́ть	= *one bed*
одно́ я́блоко	= *one apple*
одно́ сло́во	= *one word*
одно́ окно́	= *one window*

CHAPTER 17

THE NOMINATIVE

Adjectives

Examples of all the essential forms of adjectives are given in the following list in the nominative singular and plural:

Hard

Singular			*Plural*	
		beautiful		
Masc. краси́вый	krasívy		краси́вые	krasívy-ye [2]
Neut. краси́вое [1]	krasívoye	}	краси́выя	krasívy-ya [2]
Fem. краси́вая	krasívaya			

Soft

		dărk blue		
Masc. си́ній	sínyi		си́ніе	sínyiye [2]
Neut. си́нее [3]	sínyeye	}	си́нія	sínyiya [2]
Fem. си́няя	sínyaya			

Hard accent on termination

		young		
Masc. молодо́й	maladói		молоды́е	maladý-ye [2]
Neut. молодо́е	maladóye	}	молоды́я	maladý-ya [2]
Fem. молода́я	maladáya			

Stem in к г х

	Singular		*Plural*	
		high, tall		
Masc.	высóкій	vysóki	высóкіе	vysókiye [2]
Neut.	высóкое [1]	vysókoye	высóкія	vysókiya [2]
Fem.	высóкая	vysókaya		

Same, with accent on termination

		dear		
Masc.	дорогóй	daragói	дорогíе	daragíye [2]
Neut.	дорогóе	daragóye	дорогíя	daragíya [2]
Fem.	дорогáя	daragáya		

Stem in ж ч ш щ

		good, nice		
Masc.	хорóшій	(k)haróshy	хорóшіе	(k)haróshy-ye [2]
Neut.	хорóшее [3]	(k)harósheye	хорóшія	(k)haróshy-ya [2]
Fem.	хорóшая	(k)haróshaya		

Same, with accent on termination

		big		
Masc.	большóй	bal'shói	большíе	bal'shý-ye [2]
Neut.	большóе	bal'shóye	большíя	bal'shý-ya [2]
Fem.	большáя	bal'sháya		

[1] This -oe sounds in rapid speech like -ой or -ы.

[2] In rapid speech the -ye and -ya of the plural terminations are indistinguishable.

[3] This -ee sounds in rapid speech like -e.

CHAPTER 18

EXAMPLES OF ADJECTIVES USED IN AGREEMENT WITH NOUNS

краси́вый домъ	*a* (or *the*) *beautiful house*
краси́вое мѣ́сто	*a beautiful place*
краси́вая кварти́ра	*a beautiful flat*
краси́вые дома́	*(the) beautiful houses*
краси́выя мѣ́ста́	*beautiful places*
краси́выя карти́ны	*beautiful pictures*
синій костю́мъ	*a dark blue suit*
си́нее пла́тье	*a dark blue dress*
си́няя кни́га	*a blue book*
молодо́й человѣ́къ	*a young man*
молодо́е де́рево	*a young tree*
молода́я дѣ́вушка	*a young girl*
молоды́е лю́ди	*young people*
молоды́я дере́вья	*young trees*
молоды́я дѣ́вушки	*young girls*
высо́кій домъ	*a tall house*
высо́кое де́рево	*a tall tree*
высо́кая гора́	*a high hill* (or *mountain*)
высо́кіе дома́	*tall houses*
высо́кія дере́вья	*tall trees*
высо́кія цѣ́ны	*high prices*
дорого́й магази́нъ	*an expensive shop*
дорого́е изда́ніе	*an expensive edition*
дорога́я кни́га	*an expensive book*

дорогíе билéты	*expensive tickets*
дорогíя мѣстá	*expensive places*
дорогíя вéщи	*expensive things*
хорóшій магази́нъ	*a good shop*
хорóшій ресторáнъ	*a good restaurant*
хорóшій день	*a nice day*
хорóшее мáсло	*good butter*
хорóшее пи́во	*good beer*
хорóшее винó	*good wine*
хорóшая квартúра	*a nice flat*
хорóшая кóмната	*a nice room*
хорóшая погóда	*nice weather*
большóй гóродъ	*a large town*
большóе селó	*a large village*
большáя дерéвня	*a large hamlet*
большíе городá	*large towns*
большíя сёла	*large villages*
большíя кóмнаты.	*large rooms*

CHAPTER 19

VOCABULARY

Adjectives denoting size, shape, position

большóй	bal'shói	*big, large*
бóльшій	bó[l']shy	*bigger, larger*
велúкій	velyíki	*great*
огрóмный	agrómny	*huge*
громáдный	gramádny	*enormous*
небольшóй	nyebal'shói	*small*

ма́ленький [1]	m̨ályenki	*little*
ме́ньший	m(y)é^{i}nshy	*smaller*
кру́глый	krúgly	*round*
квадра́тный	kvadrátny	*square*
дли́нный	dlyínny	*long* (of *objects*)
до́лгій	dólgi	*long* (of *time*)
коро́ткій	karótki	*short* (of both)
широ́кій	shyróki	*broad*
у́зкій	úski	*narrow*
глубо́кій	glubóki	*deep*
ме́лкій [2]	myé^{a}lki	*shallow*
то́лстый	tólsty	*thick* (only of *solids*)
то́нкій	tónki	*thin* (only of *solids*)
по́лный	pólny	*full, fat* (of *people*)
худо́й	(k)hudói	*thin* (of *people*)
пусто́й	pustói	*empty*
густо́й	gustói	*thick* (of *liquids, hair,* &c.)
ре́дкій	ryé^{a}tki	*sparse, rare*
жи́дкій	zhýtki	*thin* (of *liquids*)
высо́кій	vysóki	*tall, high*
ни́зкій	nyíski	*low*
ве́рхній	v(y)é^{i}rkhnyi	*upper*
сре́дній	sr(y)é^{i}dnyi	*middle*
ни́жній	nyízhnyi	*lower*
ро́вный	róvny	*even*
ле́вый	lyé^{a}vy	*left*
пра́вый	právy	*right*
за́дній	zádnyi	*back*
пере́дній	per(y)é^{i}dnyi	*front*
сле́дующій	slyé^{a}duyushchi	*next, the following*
после́дній	paslyé^{i}dnyi	*last*
та́мошній	támashnyi	*belonging there*
зде́шній	zdyé^{i}shnyi	*belonging here*
ме́стный	myé^{a}stny	*local*

[1] ма́лый = *small* is seldom used.

[2] Also = *fine* (of *print*), *petty, small* (e.g. *money*).

CHAPTER 20

VOCABULARY

Adjectives denoting appearance, quality

хоро́шій	(k)haróshy	*nice, good*
хоро́шенькій	(k)haróshenki	*pretty*
краси́вый	krasívy	*beautiful*
прекра́сный	prekrásny	*fine, very beautiful*
преле́стный	prelyéªstny	*charming, exquisite*
чу́дный	chúdny	*marvellous*
отли́чный	atlyíchny	*excellent*
превосхо́дный	prevaskhódny	*excellent*
великоле́пный	velyikalyéªpny	*magnificent*
удиви́тельный	udyivítyelny	*astonishing*
прия́тный	priyátny	*pleasant*
любе́зный	lyubyéªzny	*amiable*
до́брый	dóbry	*kind*
ми́лый	míly	*nice, dear*
симпати́чный	simpatyíchny	*sympathetic*
весёлый	vesyóly	*merry*
заба́вный	zabávny	*amusing*
интере́сный	intyer(y)éªsny	*interesting*
заня́тный	zanyátny	*interesting*
привлека́тельный	privlyekátyelny	*attractive*
вку́сный	fkúsny	*nice* (to taste)
нехоро́шій	nyekharóshy	*not nice*
некраси́вый	nyekrasívy	*ugly*
плохо́й	plakhói	*poor, bad, miserable*
скве́рный	skvyéªrny	*horrid, nasty*
парши́вый	parshývy	*rotten*
дрянно́й	dryannói	*worthless*
непрія́тный	nyepriyátny	*unpleasant*
дурно́й	durnói	*bad, wicked*
злой	zlói	*malicious*

гру́стный	grústny	*sad*
ску́чный	skúchny	*tedious, boring*
неинтере́сный	nyeintyer(y)é^{a}sny	*uninteresting*
опа́сный	apásny	*dangerous*
стра́шный	stráshny	*terrible*
ужа́сный	uzhásny	*awful*
проти́вный	pratyívny	*disgusting*
необходи́мый	nyeapkhadyímy	*essential*
ли́шній	lyíshnyi	*extra, superfluous*
обыкнове́нный	abyknavyénny	*usual*
необыкнове́нный	nyeabyknavyénny	*unusual*
осо́бенный	asób(y)enny	*especial*
о́бщій	ópshchi	*general*
гото́вый	gatóvy	*ready*
тру́дный	trúdny	*difficult*
тяжёлый	tyazhóly	*heavy*
лёгкій	lyókhki	*light, easy*
просто́й	prastói	*simple*
сло́жный	slózhny	*complex*
прямо́й	pryamói	*direct, straight*
дорого́й	daragói	*dear, expensive*
дешёвый	dyeshóvy	*cheap*
чи́стый	chísty	*clean*
гря́зный	gryázny	*dirty*
бога́тый	bagáty	*rich*
бе́дный	byédny	*poor*
счастли́вый	schastlyívy	*happy*
несча́стный	nyeschástny	*unhappy*
удо́бный	udóbny	*convenient, comfortable*
неудо́бный	nyeudóbny	*inconvenient, uncomfortable*
здоро́вый	zdaróvy	*healthy*
больно́й	bal'nói	*sick*
свобо́дный	svabódny	*free*
слепо́й	slyepói	*blind*
глухо́й	glukhói	*deaf*
нем о́й	nyemói	*dumb*

си́льный	síl'ny	*strong* (physically and figuratively)
кре́пкій	kryé^{a}pki	*strong* (of *drinks, health*), *firm*
твёрдый	tvyórdy	*hard, firm*
сла́бый	sláby	*weak*
мя́гкій	myákhki	*soft*
гла́дкій	glátki	*smooth*
гру́бый	grúby	*rough, coarse, rude*
сла́дкій	slátki	*sweet*
ки́слый	kísly	*sour*
го́рькій	gó^{i}r'ki	*bitter*
све́жій	svyé^{a}zhy	*fresh*
спе́лый	spyé^{a}ly	*ripe*
горя́чій	garyáchi	*hot* (of objects)
жа́ркій	zhárki	*hot* (of temperature)
тёплый	tyóply	*warm*
прохла́дный	prakhládny	*cool*
холо́дный	(k)halódny	*cold*
ско́рый	skóry	*rapid*
ши́бкій	shýpki	*quick*
бы́стрый	býstry	*swift*
ти́хій	tyíkhi	*quiet, slow*
ме́дленный	myé^{i}dlyenny	*slow*
мо́крый	mókry	*wet*
сыро́й	syrói	*damp, raw*
сухо́й	sukhói	*dry*

CHAPTER 21

VOCABULARY

Adjectives denoting colour and age

све́тлый	svyé^{a}tly	*light*
тёмный	tyómny	*dark*
чёрный	chórny	*black*
кори́чневый	karíchnyevy	*brown*

сѣ́рый	syéᵃry	*grey*
бѣ́лый	byéᵃly	*white*
кра́сный	krásny	*red*
зелёный	zelyóny	*green*
жёлтый	zhólty	*yellow*
си́ній	sínyi	*dark blue*
голубо́й	galúboi	*light blue*
лило́вый	lyilóvy	*lilac, mauve*
блѣ́дный	blyéᵃdny	*pale*
сму́глый	smúgly	*dark* (of *complexion*)
ры́жій	rýzhy	*red-haired*
ру́сый	rúsy	*flaxen-haired*
бѣлоку́рый	byelakúry	*fair-haired*
сѣдо́й	syedói	*gray-haired*
я́сный	yásny	*clear, plain*
я́ркій	yárki	*bright*
но́вый	nóvy	*new*
молодо́й	maladói	*young*
ста́рый	stáry	*old*
стари́нный	starínny	*old-fashioned*
дре́вній	dr(y)éⁱvnyi	*ancient*
ста́ршій	stárshy	*elder*
мла́дшій	mládshy	*younger*
пожило́й	pazhylói	*elderly*
пре́жній	pr(y)éⁱzhnyi	*former*
про́шлый	próshly	*last, the previous*
бу́дущій	búdushchy	*the coming, next*
ра́нній	rányi	*early*
по́здній	pózdnyi	*late*
весе́нній	v(y)esyéⁱnnyi	*spring*
лѣ́тній	lyéⁱtnyi	*summer*
осе́нній	asyéⁱnnyi	*autumn*
зи́мній	zímnyi	*winter*
у́тренній	útrennyi	*morning*
вече́рній	v(y)echéⁱrnyi	*evening*
тепе́решній	tyep(y)éⁱreshnyi	*of nowadays*
тогда́шній	taghdáshnyi	*of those days*

CHAPTER 22

VOCABULARY

Adjectives denoting Nationality

австрíйскій	afstríski	*Austrian*
америкáнскій	amerikánski	*American*
áнглійскій	ánglyiski	*English*
бельгíйскій	belgíski	*Belgian*
болгáрскій	balgárski	*Bulgarian*
венгéрскій	veng(y)é^{a}rski	*Hungarian*
голлáндскій	galántski	*Dutch*
грéческій	gr(y)é^{i}cheski	*Greek*
дáтскій	dátski	*Danish*
испáнскій	ispánski	*Spanish*
италья́нскій	italyánski	*Italian*
китáйскій	kitáiski	*Chinese*
норвéжскій	narv(y)é^{a}zhski	*Norwegian*
нѣмéцкій	nyemyé^{a}tski	*German*
пóльскій	pó^{i}l'ski	*Polish*
румы́нскій	rumýnski	*Roumanian*
рýсскій	rúski	*Russian, a Russian*
сéрбскій	s(y)é^{a}rpski	*Serbian*
турéцкій	tur(y)é^{a}tski	*Turkish*
финля́ндскій	finlyántski	*Finnish*
францýзскій	frantsúski	*French*
черногóрскій	chernagórski	*Montenegrin*
чéшскій	ché^{a}shski	*Chekh, Bohemian*
швéдскій	shv(y)é^{a}tski	*Swedish*
швейцáрскій	shveitsárski	*Swiss*
япóнскій	yapónski	*Japanese*

N.B. the common adverbial expressions formed from these words, e.g.:

по-рýсски = *in Russian*

&c.

какъ э́то по-рýсски ? = *what is that in Russian ?*

по-áнглійски э́то . . . = *in English that is . . .*

Surnames

such as

(графъ) Толстóй	talstói	(Count) *Tolstói*
(графúня) Толстáя	talstáya	(Countess) *Tolstói*
Достоéвскій	dastayéfski	*Dostoyévski*
Чайкóвскій	chaykófski	*Chaikóvski*
(княгúня) Барятинская	baryátyinskaya	(Princess) *Baryátinski*

Many adjectives are used as nouns, e.g. :

гóрничная	=*house-maid*	мяснóе [2]	=*meat-course*
городовóй	=*policeman*	нáбережная	=*quay*
гостúная [1]	=*drawing-room*	насѣкóмое	=*insect*
дѣтская [1]	=*nursery*	пóдданный	=*subject*
жаркóе [2]	=*roast meat* (*course*)	рыбное [2]	=*fish-course*
живóтное	=*animal*	слáдкое [2]	=*sweet-course*
знакóмый, -ая	=*acquaintance*	столóвая [1]	=*dining-room*
золотóй	=10-*rouble gold coin*	холостóй	=*bachelor*
кладовáя [1]	=*store-room*	цѣлкóвый	=*a rouble*
морóженое	=*ice* (*to eat*)	часовóй	=*sentry*

CHAPTER 23

THE TWO FORMS OF THE ADJECTIVE

The adjective in Russian has two forms :

(1) the short, or predicative ;

(2) the long, or attributive.

The former is exactly like a noun, and, except in poetry, is only used as the predicate and in the nominative, e.g. :

я здорóвъ =*I am well*
ты довóленъ =*thou art pleased*
онъ готóвъ =*he is ready*
онá красúва =*she is beautiful*

[1] Sc. кóмната = *room.*

[2] Sc. блю́до = *dish.*

The latter is used as an attribute and must agree with the noun it qualifies. Examples of both forms of the adjective have already been given, but it is necessary to add the following observations on their use.

1. In theory the short or predicative form of the adjective is always used when the adjective forms the predicate; in practice, however, it will be found that the long or attributive form, more often than not, takes its place, all the more as the adjective, when it forms the attribute, in Russian is frequently placed after the noun which it qualifies. Examples:

онъ о́чень ми́лый = *he is (a) very nice (fellow)*
она́ краси́вая = *she is (a) beautiful (woman)*

2. Adjectives containing two consonants before the termination sometimes have an e or o inserted between the two consonants in the short form in the masc. nom. sing.:

больно́й	бо́ленъ
несча́стный	несча́стенъ
по́лный	по́лонъ
лёгкій	лёгокъ

3. Большой, небольшо́й and ма́ленькій have no short forms; the following adjectives are used instead if predicative forms are required:

го́родъ вели́къ	*the town is big*
ко́мната велика́	*the room is big*
мо́ре велико́	*the sea is big*
дома́ велики́	*the houses are big*
кварти́ры велики́	*the rooms are big*
поля́ велики́	*the fields are big*
невели́къ, &c.	*small*
малъ, мала́, мало́, малы́	*little*

(Вели́къ and малъ are often used in the sense of *too big* and *too small*.) Ма́ленькій is much more often used than малъ. Such predicative forms of the adjective as have been given in the preceding pages, e.g.: я здоро́въ = *I am well*, я бо́ленъ = *I am ill*, are all very commonly used; the word больно́й, больна́я (i.e. the attributive form of this adjective) as a rule means *the patient, the invalid*. The word радъ is only used in the short form.

4. Adjectives denoting colour and those ending in -скій are only used in the long form, e.g.:

онъ ру́сскій	*he is a Russian*
э́та да́ма—ру́сская	*this lady is a Russian*
моя́ соба́ка—чёрная	*my dog is black*

Obs. The dash is often used to take the place of *is, are*.

CHAPTER 24

PRONOUNS LIKE ADJECTIVES, AND THE SUPERLATIVE

пе́рвый	pyé^{a}rvy	*first*
второ́й	ftarói	*second*
тре́тій	tr(y)é^{i}tyi	*third*
друго́й	drugói	*other*
ка́ждый	kázhdy	*every, each*
вся́кій	fsyáki	*of every kind*
кото́рый	katóry	*which*
нѣ́который	nyé^{a}katory	*a certain, some*
како́й	kakói	*of what sort*
како́въ	kakóf	*what like*

никако́й	nyikakói	*of no sort*
како́й-то	kakóita	*of some sort*
како́й-нибудь	kakóinyibut'	*of any sort* / *of some sort or other*
тако́й	takói	*of such a sort*
тако́й-то	takóita	*such and such*
са́мый	sámy	*the very*
люб6́й	lyubói	*any you like*
ино́й	inói	*some*
мно́гіе	mnógiye	*many (people), several*
немно́гіе	nyemnógiye	*not many, few*
нѣ́сколькіе	nyé[a]skalkiye	*a few*

and the adjective used as a noun

мно́гое	mnógoye (cf. p. 71)	*much*

одѝнъ разъ / *or* разъ = *once*

пе́рвый разъ = *the first time*
пе́рвый день = *the first day*
пе́рвый классъ = *first class*
пе́рвое дѣ́ло = *the first thing (matter, business)*
пе́рвая у́лица = *the first street*
пе́рвое мѣ́сто = *the first place*

второ́й разъ = *the second time*
второ́й день = *the second day*
второ́й классъ = *second class*
второ́е дѣ́ло = *the second thing*
втора́я ночь = *the second night*

тре́тій разъ = *the third time*
тре́тій день = *the third day*
тре́тій классъ = *third class*

тре́тье дѣ́ло = *the third thing*
тре́тье мѣ́сто = *the third place*
тре́тья у́лица = *the third street*
тре́тья ночь = *the third night*
тре́тья дочь = *the third daughter*

ка́ждый по́ѣздъ = *every train*
ка́ждое сло́во = *every word*
ка́ждая ста́нція = *every station*

друго́й разъ = *another time*
друго́й день = *another day*
друго́е мѣ́сто = *another place*
друго́е полоте́нце = *another towel*
друга́я ко́мната = *another* (or *different*) *room*
друга́я у́лица = *another street*

кото́рый но́меръ ? = *which number ?* (cf. p. 45)
кото́рый подъѣ́здъ ? = *which front door ?*
кото́рая ко́мната ? = *which room ?*
кото́рая лѣ́стница ? = *which staircase ?*

како́й супъ ? = *what kind of soup ?*
како́е мя́со ? = *what kind of meat ?*
кака́я у́лица ? = *what street ?*

э́то како́й го́родъ ? = *what town is that ?*
э́то како́й домъ ? = *what house is that ?*
кото́рый вашъ домъ ? = *which is your house ?*
кото́рый сего́дня день ? } = *what day is it to-day ?*
or како́й сего́дня день ? }
сего́дня Воскресе́нье = *to-day is Sunday* (*Resurrection*)
за́втра понедѣ́льникъ = *to-morrow is Monday*
сего́дня вто́рникъ = *to-day is Tuesday*

зáвтрà средá = *to-morrow is Wednesday*
вчерá былъ четвéргъ = *yesterday was Thursday*
зáвтра пя́тница = *to-morrow is Friday*
вчерá былá суббóта = *yesterday was Saturday*
э́то какáя у́лица ? = *what street is this ?*
э́то Нéвскій Проспéктъ = *that is the Nevski Prospect*
э́то какáя рѣкá ? = *what river is this ?*
э́то Невá = *that is the Neva*
котóрая вáша квартúра ? = *which is your flat ?*
котóрая вáша кóмната ? = *which is your room ?*
вотъ нáша квартúра = *that is our flat*
э́то моя́ кóмната = *this is my room*
котóрое вáше мѣ́сто ? = *which is your place ?*
вотъ э́то моё мѣ́сто = *this is my place here*
э́то какóе мѣ́сто ? = *what place is this ?*
э́то большóе селó = *it is a large village*
э́то Цáрское Селó = *it is Tsarskoye Selo*
(lit. *the Tsar's Village*)
котóрые нáши билéты ? = *which tickets are ours ?*
э́то какíе лю́ди ? = *what people are these ?*
котóрыя вáши вéщи ? = *which are your things ?*
вотъ э́то мои́ вéщи = *these are my things here*
всѣ э́ти вéщи вáши ? = *are all these things yours ?*
да, онѣ́ всѣ мои́ = *yes, they are all mine*
э́то какíя дéньги ? = *what money is this ?*
э́то рýсскія дéньги = *it is Russian money*
нѣтъ, э́то не рýсскія дéньги = *no, it is not Russian money*
тѣ дéньги вáши, а э́ти мои́ = *that money is yours, but this is mine*
э́то какíя мѣ́стá ? = *what places are these ?*
э́то óчень хорóшія, но óчень дорогíя мѣ́стá } = { *those are very good but very expensive places*

котóрыя вáши поля́ ? = *which are your fields ?*
всѣ э́ти поля́ мои́ = *all these fields are mine*
котóрыя вáши дѣ́ти ? = *which are your children ?*
вотъ э́то мои́ дѣ́ти = *these are my children here*
какíя краси́выя и хорóшія дѣ́ти ! } = { *what beautiful and nice children !*
какóй краси́вый домъ = *what a beautiful house*
кака́я плоха́я погóда = *what bad weather*
какóе хорóшее мѣ́сто = *what a nice place*
какíе большíе магази́ны = *what large shops*
какíя дешёвыя кни́ги = *what cheap books*
какíя стáрыя дерéвья = *what old trees*

такóй хорóшій день = *such a nice day*
така́я краси́вая у́лица = *such a beautiful street*
такóе большóе селó = *such a large village*
такíе хорóшіе лю́ди = *such nice people*
такíя краси́выя дѣ́вушки = *such pretty girls*
такíя большíя дерéвья = *such large trees*

Obs. A more emphatic form of this word, but little used by educated people, is э́такой, э́такая, э́такое, &c.

кто э́то такóй ? } = *who is that ?*
or э́то кто такóй ? }
кто онъ такóй ? = *who is he ?*
кто онá такáя ? = *who is she ?*
кто они́ такíе ? = *who are they ?*
что э́то такóе ? } = *what is that ?*
or э́то что такóе ? }

кто́-то тамъ = *there is some one there*
что́-то тамъ = *there is something there*
тамъ ли кто́-нибудь ? = *is any one there ?*
тамъ ли что́-нибудь ? = *is anything there ?*

како́й-то челове́къ = *some man, a certain man*
кака́я-то у́лица = *some street, a certain street*
како́е-то село́ = *some village, a certain village*
каки́е-то лю́ди = *some people or other*
каки́я-то же́нщины = *some women or other*
каки́я-то дѣла́ = *some sort of affairs*
како́й-нибудь магази́нъ = *any (sort of) shop*
кака́я-нибудь вещь = *any (sort of) thing*
како́е-нибудь мѣсто = *any (sort of) place*
каки́е-нибудь города́ = *any towns*
каки́я-нибудь ве́щи = *any things*
каки́я-нибудь мѣста́ = *any places*

не́которые лю́ди = *certain people*
не́которыя ве́щи = *certain things*
не́которыя мѣста́ = *certain places*

како́й супъ ? = *what kind of soup ?*
како́въ супъ ? = *what is the soup like ?*
како́е вино́ ? = *what kind of wine ?*
каково́ вино́ ? = *what is the wine like ?*
кака́я ры́ба ? = *what kind of fish ?*
какова́ ры́ба ? = *what is the fish like ?*

са́мый краси́вый домъ = *the most beautiful house*
са́мый большо́й го́родъ = *the biggest town*
са́мая краси́вая у́лица = *the most beautiful street*
са́мая но́вая вещь = *the newest thing*
са́мое краси́вое мѣсто = *the most beautiful place*
са́мое ста́рое де́рево = *the oldest tree*
са́мые ма́ленькіе дома́ = *the smallest houses*
са́мыя дорогія кни́ги = *the dearest books*
са́мыя дешёвыя мѣста́ = *the cheapest places*

N.B. са́мый лу́чшій = *best*
са́мый плохо́й } = *worst*
са́мый сквёрный }

Obs. Adjectives in the superlative degree have only the longer or attributive form:

э́тотъ магази́нъ са́мый лу́чшій
this shop is the best

э́та ко́мната са́мая ма́ленькая
this room is the smallest

э́то изда́ніе са́мое дешёвое
this edition is the cheapest

N.B. мла́дшій = *younger*
ста́ршій = *elder*
са́мый мла́дшій = *youngest*
са́мый ста́ршій = *eldest*

онъ мой са́мый мла́дшій братъ = *he is my youngest brother*
твоя́ ста́ршая сестра́ = *thy elder sister*
онъ са́мый ста́ршій = *he is the eldest*
э́то моя́ мла́дшая сестра́ = *that is my younger sister.*

тотъ са́мый го́родъ = *the same town*
та са́мая у́лица = *the same street*
то са́мое мѣ́сто = *the same place*
тѣ са́мые магази́ны = *the same shops*
тѣ са́мыя ве́щи = *the same things*
тѣ са́мыя дѣла́ = *the same affairs*

CHAPTER 25

THE GENITIVE

Substantives

The genitive singular endings are:

Hard	Masculine, Neuter	-a
	Feminine	-ы

and

Soft	Masculine, Neuter	-я
	Feminine	-и

Examples:

Hard Nouns	Masculine	магази́на	magazína
		биле́та	bilyéªta
		стола́	stalá
	Neuter	мѣ́ста	myéªsta
		села́	s(y)elá
		о́бщества	ópshchestva
	Feminine	ба́бы	báby
		ко́мнаты	kómnaty
		избы́	izbý

Soft Nouns	Masculine	автомоби́ля	aftamabílya
		слу́чая	slúchaya
		соловья́	salavyá
		Васи́лія	vasíliya
	Neuter	по́ля	pólya
		ружья́	ruzhyá
		имѣ́нія	imyé^{i}niya
	Feminine	недѣ́ли	nyedyé^{i}lyi
		статьи́	statyí
		а́рміи	ármiyi
		Россíи	rassíyi

Masculine nouns which contain e or o in the last syllable of the nominative singular and lose it throughout the rest of the declension :

	NOM. SING.	GEN. SING.
Hard	конéцъ kanyé^{a}ts	конца́ kantsá
	посóлъ pasól	посла́ paslá
	ребёнокъ rebyónak	ребёнка rebyónka
Soft	день dye^{i}n’	дня dnya
	огóнь agó^{i}n’	огня́ agnyá

Some masculine nouns have an alternative genitive singular in -у (hard), -ю (soft), called partitive, which is used after words denoting substances of which a definite or indefinite quantity is indicated :

	NOM. SING.			GEN. SING.
Hard	са́харъ	sákhar	*sugar*	са́хару
	таба́къ	tabák	*tobacco*	таба́ку́
Soft	чай	chái	*tea*	ча́ю

But the use of this genitive has been considerably extended and is common where there is no idea of partition; cf. нѣту, an alternative and colloquial form of нѣтъ = *there is not*.

All feminine nouns which have nominative singular in

-ка, -га, -ха, -жа, -ча, -ша, -ща

have genitive singular

-ки, -ги, -хи, -жи, -чи, -ши, -щи,

because ы cannot stand after these consonants; but nevertheless -жи and -ши are pronounced -жы and -шы.

Examples (with pronunciation):

NOM. SING.		GEN. SING.	
дѣвочка	dyé^{a}vachka	дѣвочки	dyé^{a}vachki
свѣчá	sv(y)echá	свѣчи́	sv(y)echí
калóша	kalósha	калóши	kalóshy

Feminine surnames in -ова, -ева, -ина, have genitive singular in -ой: Пáвловой, Арсéньевой, Карсáвиной.

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь have genitive singular in -и, e.g.:

NOM. SING.		GEN. SING.
лóшадь	*horse*	лóшади
вещь	*thing*	вéщи
цéрковь	*church*	цéркви
мать	*mother*	мáтери
дочь	*daughter*	дóчери

Neuter nouns in -я have genitive singular in -ени, e.g.:

NOM. SING.		GEN. SING.
врéмя	*time*	врéмени

The genitive plural endings are:

Hard	Masculine	-овъ
	Neuter	-ъ
	Feminine	-ъ

and

Soft	Masculine	-ей, -евъ
	Neuter	-ей, -ій
	Feminine	-ь, -ей, -ій

Examples:

Hard Nouns	Masculine	магази́новъ	magazínaf
		биле́товъ	bilyé^{a}taf
		столо́въ	stalófˈ
	Neuter	мѣстъ	myé^{a}st
		сёлъ	syol
		о́бществъ	ópshchestf
	Feminine	бабъ	bap
		ко́мнатъ	kómnat
		избъ	isp
Soft Nouns	Masculine	автомоби́лей	aftamabílyei
		слу́чаевъ	slúchayef
		соловьёвъ	salavyófˈ
	Neuter	поле́й	palyéi
		ру́жей	rúzhei
		имѣ́ній	imyé^{i}nyi
	Feminine	недѣ́ль	nyedyé^{i}lˈ
		стате́й	statyéi
		а́рмій	ármi

Several masculine nouns have genitive plural in -ъ, e.g. :

NOM. SING.		GEN. PLUR.	
солда́тъ	*soldier*	солда́тъ	saldát
разъ	*time (a)*	разъ	ras
глазъ	*eye*	глазъ	glas
арши́нъ	*yard*	арши́нъ	arshýn

NOM. PLUR.			
во́лосы	*hair* (collective)	волóсъ	valós
конфе́ты	*sweets*	конфе́тъ	kanfyé^{a}t
фру́кты	*fruit* (collective)	фруктъ	frukt

Likewise nouns in -инъ, e.g. :

NOM. PLUR.		GEN. PLUR.	
крестья́не	krestyánye	крестья́нъ	krestyán
англича́не	anglyichánye	англича́нъ	anglyichán

Likewise the neuters :

NOM. PLUR.		GEN. PLUR.	
я́блоки	yáblaki *apples*	я́блокъ	yáblak
плéчи	plyé^{i}chi *shoulders*	плечъ	plyé^{a}ch
колѣни	kalyé^{i}nyi *knees*	колѣнъ	kalyé^{a}n

Masculine nouns which contain e or o in the last syllable of the nominative singular and lose it throughout the rest of the declension :

	NOM. PLUR.		GEN. PLUR.	
HARD	концы́	kantsý	концóвъ	kantsóf
	послы́	paslý	послóвъ	paslóf
SOFT	дни	dnyí	дней	dnyéi
	огни́	agnyí	огнéй	agnyéi

Obs. Those in -ецъ which have not the accent on the termination have gen. plur. in -евъ :

NOM. SING.		
нѣмецъ	nyé^{i}m(y)ets	*German*
and мѣсяцъ	myé^{i}syats	*month*

NOM. PLUR.		GEN. PLUR.	
нѣмцы	nyé^{a}mtsy	нѣмцевъ	nyé^{a}mtsef
мѣсяцы	myé^{i}syatsy	мѣсяцевъ	myé^{i}syatsef

Masculine nouns with nominative singular in

-жъ, -чъ, -шъ, -щъ

have genitive plural in -ей, e.g. :

NOM. SING.		
ножъ	nosh	*knife*
ключъ	klyuch	*key*

NOM. PLUR.		GEN. PLUR.	
ножи́	nazhý	ноже́й	nazhéi
ключи́	klyuchí	ключе́й	klyuchéi

Feminine and neuter nouns with two consonants before the final -a, -я, -o, -e, which in the genitive plural (without termination) would be difficult to pronounce, insert e or o between them to facilitate pronunciation, e.g. :

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR.	GEN. PLUR.
дѣвочка	*little girl*	дѣвочки	дѣвочекъ
дѣвушка	*girl*	дѣвушки	дѣвушекъ
дере́вня	*hamlet*	дере́вни	деревень
ба́рышня	*young lady*	ба́рышни	ба́рышень

NOM. SING.		NOM. PLUR.	GEN. PLUR.
—	*money*	де́ньги	де́негъ
окно́	*window*	о́кна	о́конъ
письмо́	*letter*	пи́сьма	пи́семъ

The following must be remembered :

NOM. PLUR.		GEN. PLUR.	
сту́лья [1]	stúlya [1]	сту́льевъ	stúlyef
бра́тья	brátya	бра́тьевъ	brátyef
сыновья́	synavyá	сынове́й	synavyéi
друзья́	druzyá	друзе́й	druzyéi
сосѣ́ди	sasyé^{i}dyi	сосѣ́дей	sasyé^{i}dyei
цвѣта́	tsv(y)etá	цвѣто́въ	tsv(y)etóf
цвѣты́	tsv(y)etý		
дере́вья	dyer(y)é^{i}vya	дере́вьевъ	dyer(y)é^{i}vyef
суда́	sudá	суда́въ	sudóf
облака́ [2]	ablaká	облако́въ	ablakóf
у́ши	úshy	ушéй	ushéi
о́чи	óchi	очéй	achéi
чудеса́	chudyesá	чудéсъ	chudyé^{a}s
небеса́	nyeb(y)esá	небéсъ	nyebyé^{a}s
я́йца [3]	yáitsa	яи́цъ	yayíts

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь, and nominative plural in -и have genitive plural in -ей, e.g. :

NOM. PLUR.		GEN. PLUR.	
ло́шади	lóshadyi	лошаде́й	lashadyéi
ве́щи	v(y)é^{i}shchi	вещéй	v(y)eshchéi

[1] For meanings cf. p. 37. [2] Nom. sing. о́блако =*cloud*.
[3] Nom. sing. яйцо́ =*egg*.

NOM. PLUR.		GEN. PLUR.	
це́ркви	ts(y)é'rkvi	церкве́й	tserkvyéi
ма́тери	mátyeri	матере́й	matyeryéi
до́чери	dócheri	дочере́й	dacheryéi
лю́ди	lyúdyi	люде́й	lyudyéi
дѣ́ти	dyé'tyi	дѣте́й	dyetyéi

Neuter nouns in -я have genitive plural in -ёнъ, e.g.:

времена́	vremená	времёнъ	vremyón.

CHAPTER 26

PRONOUNS

	NOMINATIVE	GENITIVE	
	я	меня́	m(y)enyá
	ты	тебя́	tyebyá
masc.	онъ	его́ [1]	yevó
neut.	оно́		
fem.	она́	ея [1]	yeyó
	мы	насъ	nas
	вы	васъ	vas
masc., neut.	они́	ихъ [1]	yikh
fem.	онѣ́		
m., n., f.	—	себя́ [2]	s(y)ebyá

[1] When governed by a preposition these words assume an initial н, e.g. отъ него́, отъ неи́, отъ нихъ.

[2] себя́ is the reflexive pronoun, which can be used of any person in either number, but must always refer directly to the subject of the sentence; it can mean: *myself, thyself, himself, herself, itself, ourselves, yourselves* or *themselves*; it has no nominative.

		NOMINATIVE	GENITIVE	
SING.	masc.	мой	моегó	mayevó
	neut.	моё		
	fem.	моя́	моéй	mayéi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	мои́	мои́хъ	mayíkh
SING.	masc.	твой	твоегó	tvayevó
	neut.	твоё		
	fem.	твоя́	твоéй	tvayéi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	твои́	твои́хъ	tvayíkh
SING.	masc.	нашъ	на́шего	násheva
	neut.	на́ше		
	fem.	на́ша	на́шей	náshei
PLUR.	m., n., f.	на́ши	на́шихъ	náshykh
SING.	masc.	вашъ	ва́шего	vásheva
	neut.	ва́ше		
	fem.	ва́ша	ва́шей	váshei
PLUR.	m., n., f.	ва́ши	ва́шихъ	váshykh
SING.	masc.	свой [1]	своегó	svayevó
	neut.	своё		
	fem.	своя́	своéй	svayéi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	свои́	свои́хъ	svayíkh
	masc., fem.	кто	кого́	kavó
	neut.	что	чего́	chevó

[1] Cf. note on p. 56.

		NOMINATIVE	GENITIVE	
SING.	masc.	чей	чьегó	chyevó
	neut.	чьё		
	fem.	чья	чьей	chyéi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	чьи	чьихъ	chyíkh
SING.	masc.	одúнъ	одногó	adnavó
	neut.	однó		
	fem.	однá	однóй	adnói
PLUR.	masc., neut.	одни́	одни́хъ	adnyíkh
	fem.	однѣ	однѣхъ	adnyé[a]kh
SING.	masc.	самъ	самогó	samavó
	neut.	самó		
	fem.	сама́	самóй	samói
PLUR.	m., n., f.	са́ми	сами́хъ	samíkh
SING.	masc.	э́тотъ	э́того	é[a]tava
	neut.	э́то		
	fem.	э́та	э́той [1]	é[a]toi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	э́ти	э́тихъ	é[i]tyikh
SING.	masc.	тотъ	того́	tavó
	neut.	то		
	fem.	та	той	toi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	тѣ	тѣхъ	tyé[a]kh
SING.	masc.	весь	всегó	fs(y)evó
	neut.	всё		
	fem.	вся	всей	fsyéi
PLUR.	m., n., f.	всѣ	всѣхъ	fsye[a]kh

[1] This -ой in rapid speech sounds like -ы.

CHAPTER 27

ADJECTIVES

		NOMINATIVE	GENITIVE	
SING.	masc.	краси́вый	краси́ваго	krasívava
	neut.	краси́вое		
	fem.	краси́вая	краси́вой [1]	krasívoi
PLUR.	m.	краси́вые	краси́выхъ	krasívykh
	n., f.	краси́выя		
SING.	masc.	си́ній	си́няго	sínyava
	neut.	си́нее		
	fem.	си́няя	си́ней	sínyei
PLUR.	m.	си́ніе	си́нихъ	sínyikh
	n., f.	си́нія		
SING.	masc.	молодо́й	молодо́го	maladóva
	neut.	молодо́е		
	fem.	молода́я	молодо́й	maladói
PLUR.	m.	молоды́е	молоды́хъ	maladýkh
	n., f.	молоды́я		
SING.	masc.	высо́кій	высо́каго	vysókava
	neut.	высо́кое		
	fem.	высо́кая	высо́кой [1]	vysókoi
PLUR.	m.	высо́кіе	высо́кихъ	vysókikh
	n., f.	высо́кія		

[1] This -ой in rapid speech sounds like -ы.

		NOMINATIVE	GENITIVE	
SING.	masc.	дорого́й	дорого́го	daragóva
	neut.	дорого́е		
	fem.	дорога́я	дорого́й	daragói
PLUR.	m.	дороги́е	дороги́хъ	daragíkh
	n., f.	дороги́я		
SING.	masc.	хоро́шій	хоро́шаго	(k)haróshava
	neut.	хоро́шее		
	fem.	хоро́шая	хоро́шей	(k)haróshei
PLUR.	m.	хоро́шіе	хоро́шихъ	(k)haróshykh
	n., f.	хоро́шія		
SING.	masc.	большо́й	большо́го	bal'shóva
	neut.	большо́е		
	fem.	больша́я	большо́й	bal'shói
PLUR.	m.	большіе	больши́хъ	bal'shýkh
	n., f.	большія		

CHAPTER 28

VOCABULARY

Literature, Music, Theatre, &c.

газе́та *f.*	gazyé[a]ta	*newspaper*
журна́лъ *m.*	zhurnál	*magazine*
статья́ *f.*	statyá	*article*
рома́нъ *m.*	ramán	*novel*
разска́зъ *m.*	raskás	*tale*
томъ *m.*	tom	*volume*
изда́ніе *n.*	izdániye	*edition*
сочине́ніе *n.*	sachinyé[i]niye	*work, composition*
собра́ніе *n.*	sabrániye	*collection*

стихотворе́ніе *n.*	styikhatvar(y)é^{i}niye	*poem*
пье́са *f.*	pyé^{a}sa	*play*
сце́на *f.*	sts(y)é^{a}na	*stage*
представле́ніе *n.*	pretstavlyé^{i}niye	*performance*
дѣ́йствіе *n.*	dyéistviye	*act*
сло́во (*pl.* слова́) *n.*	slóva, slavá	*word(s)*
слова́рь *m.*	slavá^{i}r'	*dictionary*
язы́къ *m.*	yazýk	*language*
карти́на *f.*	kartyína	*picture*
худо́жникъ *m.*	(k)hudózhnyik	*artist, painter*
писа́тель *m.*	pisá^{i}tyel'	*writer*
а́второръ *m.*	áftor	*author*
литерату́ра *f.*	lyityeratúra	*literature*
худо́жество *n.*	(k)hudózhestva	*painting*
уро́къ *m.*	urók	*lesson*
му́зыка *f.*	múzyka	*music*
роя́ль *m.*	rayá^{i}l'	*grand piano*
пьяни́но *n.*	pyanyíno	*upright piano*
но́ты *f. pl.*	nóty	*music* (printed)
конце́ртъ *m.*	kants(y)é^{a}rt	*concert*
пѣ́сня *f.*	p(y)é^{i}snya	*song*
ка́рты *f. pl.*	kárty	*cards*
игра́ *f.*	igrá	*game*
ша́хматы *m. pl.*	shákhmaty	*chess*
разгово́ръ *m.*	razgavór	*conversation*
наде́жда *f.*	nadyé^{a}zhda	*hope*
вѣ́ра *f.*	vyé^{a}ra	*faith*
любо́вь *f.*	lyubó^{i}f'	*love*
война́ *f.*	vainá	*war*
миръ *m.*	mir	*peace*
зако́нъ *m.*	zakón	*law*
мнѣ́ніе *m.*	mnyé^{i}niye	*opinion*
сча́стіе *n.*	schástiye	*happiness*
несча́стіе *n.*	nyeschástiye	*unhappiness*
удивле́ніе *n.*	udyivlyé^{i}niye	*surprise*
сожалѣ́ніе *n.*	sazhalyé^{i}niye	*regret*
удово́льствіе	udavó^{i}l'stviye	*pleasure*

CHAPTER 29

PHRASES CONTAINING WORDS IN THE GENITIVE

Петрогра́дъ и Москва́—столи́цы Россіи
Petrograd and Moscow are the capitals of Russia

Ло́ндонъ—столи́ца Англіи
London is the capital of England

мой това́рищъ—сынъ ва́шего знако́маго
my friend is the son of your acquaintance (masc.)

вашъ знако́мый—другъ моего́ отца́
your acquaintance is a friend of my father's

э́то большо́й другъ моего́ бра́та
that is a great friend of my brother's

моя́ сестра́—прія́тельница ва́шей до́чери
my sister is a friend of your daughter

вашъ сынъ—учени́къ моего́ дя́ди
your son is a pupil of my uncle

ва́ша до́чка—учени́ца мое́й знако́мой
your daughter is a pupil of my acquaintance (fem.)

вагóнъ пéрваго клáсса
a railway carriage of the first class

биле́тъ второ́го кла́сса
a ticket of the second class

за́ла тре́тьяго кла́сса
a third-class waiting-room

человѣ́къ тако́го ро́да
a man of such a kind

тако́го ро́да лю́ди
people of such a kind

э́то како́го ро́да теа́тръ ?
what sort of theatre is that ?

э́то како́го ро́да зда́ніе ?
what sort of building is that ?

э́то домъ моего́ ста́ршего бра́та
this is the house of my elder brother

э́то кварти́ра мое́й мла́дшей сестры́
this is the flat of my younger sister

э́то имѣ́ніе мои́хъ роди́телей
this is the property of my parents

гдѣ́ портре́тъ твоего́ отца́ ?
where is thy father's portrait ?

гдѣ́ портре́тъ твое́й ма́тери ?
where is thy mother's portrait ?

гдѣ́ имѣ́ніе твои́хъ друзе́й ?
where is your friends' property ?

э́то подъѣ́здъ на́шего до́ма
this is the front door of our house

вотъ о́кна на́шей кварти́ры
these are the windows of our flat

э́то ко́мната на́шихъ дѣте́й
that is our children's room

какъ здоро́вье ва́шего супру́га ?
how is your husband's health ?

какъ здоро́вье ва́шей супру́ги ?
how is your wife's health ?

какъ здоро́вье ва́шихъ роди́телей ?
how is your parents' health ?

по́лное собра́ніе сочине́ній гра́фа Льва́ [1] Никола́евича Толсто́го
a complete collection of the works of Count Leo Nikolayevich Tolstói

всѣ сочине́нія Алекса́ндра Серге́евича Пу́шкина
all the works of Alexander Sergeyevich Púshkin

стихотворе́нія Михаи́ла Ю́рьевича Ле́рмонтова
the poems of Michael Yurevich Lérmontov

сочине́нія Никола́я Васи́льевича Го́голя (nom. Го́голь), Ива́на Серге́евича Турге́нева и Ѳёдора Миха́йловича Достое́вскаго
the works of Nicholas Vasilevich Gógol (pron. *Gógal'*), *Ivan Sergeyevich Turgénev, and Theodore Mikhailovich Dostoyévski*

онъ братъ Со́фіи Никола́евны Андре́евой
he is the brother of Sophia Nikolayevna Andreyeva
(i.e. of Mrs. or Miss Andreyev)

э́то имѣ́ніе Елизаве́ты Серге́евны Петро́вской
this is the property of Elizabeth Sergeyevna Petrovskaya
(i.e. of Mrs. or Miss Petrovski)

(жела́ю вамъ) споко́йной (or поко́йной) но́чи !
(*I wish you*) *good-night* (*lit. of a quiet night*) *!*

[1] Nom. sing. Левъ, often pronounced Lyof; левъ; pron. lyef = *lion.*

CHAPTER 30

THE EXPRESSION OF HIS, HER, THEIR

There is no possessive pronoun of the third person in Russian, and this want is supplied by the genitive of the personal pronoun, e.g.:

гдѣ его́ домъ ? = *where is his house ?*
э́то его́ домъ = *that is his house*
э́то ея́ мужъ = *that is her husband*
э́то его́ жена́ = *that is his wife*
онъ ея́ жени́хъ = *he is her fiancé*
она его́ невѣ́ста = *she is his fiancée*
э́то ихъ дѣ́ти = *these are their children*
его́ ко́мната здѣсь = *his room is here*
ея́ ко́мната тамъ = *her room is there*
э́то ихъ кварти́ра = *this is their flat*
вотъ его́ письмо́ = *here is his letter*
вотъ ея́ письмо́ = *here is her letter*
э́то имѣ́ніе его́ ма́тери = *this is the property of his mother*
э́то имѣ́ніе ея́ отца́ = *this is the property of her father*
какъ его́ а́дресъ = *what* (lit. *how*) *is his address*
вотъ ея́ а́дресъ = *here is her address*

In all such cases the use of the pronoun свой (*one's own*) would be incorrect.

CHAPTER 31

VOCABULARY

Food, drink, &c.

закýска *f.*	zakúska	*hors-d'œuvre*
икрá *f.*	ikrá	*caviar*
соль *f.*	sóⁱl'	*salt*
пéрецъ *m.*	p(y)éⁱrets	*pepper*
горчúца *f.*	garchítsa	*mustard*
хлѣбъ *m.*	(k)hlyéᵃp	*bread, loaf*
бýлка *f.*	búlka	*little loaf, roll*
калáчъ *m.*	kalách	*a loaf with handle* [1]
сыръ *m.*	syr	*cheese*
мáсло *n.*	másla	*butter* (also = *oil*)
ýксусъ *m.*	úksus	*vinegar*
пирожóкъ *m.*	pirazhók	*little pie* [1]
супъ *m.*	sup	*soup*
щи *f. pl.*	shchi	*cabbage-soup* [1]
борщъ *m.*	borshch	*beetroot-soup* [1]
сметáна *f.*	sm(y)etána	*sour cream*
ры́ба *f.*	rýba	*fish*
ры́бное *n.* [2]	rýb̯noye [2]	*fish-course*
мя́со *n.*	myása	*meat*
мясно́е *n.*	myasnóye	*meat-course*
жарко́е *n.*	zharkóye	*roast meat, joint*
говя́дина *f.*	gavyádyina	*beef*
теля́тина *f.*	tyelyátyina	*veal*
бара́нина *f.*	barányina	*mutton*
котле́тъ *m.*	katlyéᵃt	*cutlet*
филé *n.*	filyé	*fillet*
ро́стбифъ *m.*	rósbif	*roast beef, steak*
бифште́ксъ *m.*	bifshtyéᵃks	*roast beef, steak*
со́усъ *m.*	sóus	*sauce*
поли́вка *f.*	palyífka	*gravy*

[1] National specialities.

[2] Cf. note 1 on p. 71.

свини́на *f.*	svinyína	*pork*
о́корокъ *m.*	ókarak	*a ham, gammon*
ветчина́ *f.*	vechiná	*ham* (in slices)
гусь *m.*	gus'	*goose*
у́тка *f.*	útka	*duck*
индѣ́йка *f.*	indyéika	*turkey-hen*
ку́рица *f.*	kúritsa	*fowl*
цыплёнокъ *m.*	tsyplyónak	*chicken*
ря́бчикъ *m.*	ryápchik	*grouse*
дичь *f.*	dyích	*game*
язы́къ *m.*	yazýk	*tongue*
колбаса́ *f.*	kalbasá	*polony* (*sausage*)
соси́ска *f.*	sasíska	*small sausage*
яйцо́ *n.*	yaitsó	*egg*
яйцо́ въ смя́тку *n.*	yaitsó fsmyátku	*boiled egg*
яи́чница *f.*	yayíchnyitsa	*scrambled eggs*
омле́тъ *m.*	amlyé^{a}t	*omelet*
овощь *f.*	óvashch	*vegetable*
зе́лень *f.*	z(y)é^{i}lyen'	*green vegetable*
карто́фель *f.*	kartófel'	*potato*(*es*)
капу́ста *f.*	kapústa	*cabbage*
цвѣтна́я капу́ста *f.*	tsv(y)etnáya kapústa	*cauliflower*
морко́вь *f.*	markó^{i}f'	*carrot*(*s*)
свёкла *f.*	svyókla	*beetroot*
бобы́ *m. pl.*	babý	*beans*
рѣ́па *f.*	ryé^{a}pa	*turnip*
лукъ *m.*	luk	*onion*
огуре́цъ *m.*	aguryé^{a}ts	*cucumber*
помидо́ръ *m.*	pamidór	*tomato*
рѣ́дька *f.*	ryé^{i}t'ka	*radish*
(грибъ) грибы́ *m.*	(grip) gribý	*mushroom*(*s*)
сла́дкое *n.*[1]	slátkoye [1]	*sweet course*
тѣ́сто *n.*	tyé^{a}sta	*dough, pastry*
пиро́гъ *m.*	pirók	*pie*
компо́тъ *m.*	kampót	*stewed fruit*
варе́нье *n.*	var(y)é^{i}nye	*jam*

[1] Cf. note 1 on p. 71.

(плодъ) плоды́ *m.*	(plot) pladý	*fruit* (still growing)
(фруктъ) фру́кты *m.*	frúkty	*fruit* (on table)
мёдъ *m.*	myot	*honey*
я́года *f.*	yágada	*berry*
я́блоко *n.*	yáblaka	*apple*
гру́ша *f.*	grúsha	*pear*
апельси́нъ *m.*	ap(y)elsín	*orange*
(ви́шня) ви́шни *f. pl.*	víshnyi	*cherries*
сли́ва *f.*	slyíva	*plum*
мали́на *f.*	malyína	*raspberries*
клубни́ка *f.*	klubnyíka	*strawberries*
земляни́ка *f.*	zemlyanyíka	*strawberries* (wild)
смороди́на *f.*	smaródyina	*currants*
крыжо́вникъ *m.*	kryzhóvnyik	*gooseberries*
виногра́дъ *m.*	vinagrát	*grapes*
ви́нная я́года *f.*	vínnaya yágada	*figs*
фи́ники *m. pl.*	fínyiki	*dates*
пе́рсики *m. pl.*	p(y)é^{i}rsiki	*peaches*
конфе́ты *m. pl.*	kanfyé^{a}ty	*sweets*
шокола́дъ *m.*	shakalát	*chocolate*
бисквиты *m. pl.*	biskvíty	*biscuits*
оре́хъ *m.*	aryé^{a}kh	*walnut*
лимо́нъ *m.*	lyimón	*lemon*
ды́ня *f.*	dýnya	*melon*
арбу́зъ *m.*	arbús	*water-melon*
са́харъ *m.*	sákhar	*sugar*
моро́женое *n.*[1]	marózhenoye[1]	*ice (cream)*
родъ *m.* / сортъ *m.* (plur. of both)	rot / sort — sartá	*kind, quality, sort*
вода́ *f.*	vadá	*water*
кипято́къ *m.*	kipitók	*boiling water*
пи́во *n.*	píva	*beer*
вино́ *n.*	vinó	*wine*
во́дка *f.*	vótka	*vodka*
чай *m.*	chai	*tea*

[1] Cf. note 1 on p. 71.

ко́фе(й) *m.*	kóf(y)e	*coffee*
молоко́ *n.*	malakó	*milk*
сли́вки *f. pl.*	slyífki	*cream*
квасъ *m.*	kvas	*kvas* [1]
конья́къ *m.*	kanyák	*cognac*
обѣ́дъ *m.*	abyé^{a}t	*dinner*
у́жинъ *m.*	úzhyn	*supper*
за́втракъ *m.*	záftrak	*lunch*
кусо́къ *m.*	kusók	*piece*
кусо́чекъ *m.*	kusóchek	*bit*
шту́ка *f.*	shtúka	*a piece, a head, a unit*
таба́къ *m.*	tabák	*tobacco*
папиро́са *f.*	papirósa	*cigarette*
цига́ра *f.*	tsigára	*cigar*
тру́бка *f.*	trúpka	*pipe*

CHAPTER 32

THE GENITIVE IN NEGATIONS

In simple negations the word не is used:

э́то не мой домъ = *this is not my house*
э́то не на́ша ко́мната = *this is not our room*
э́то не село́, а дере́вня = *this is not a village, but a hamlet*
э́то не рубль, а то́лько полти́на (or полти́нникъ) = *this is not a rouble, but only half a rouble*

But in a great many cases the word нѣтъ meaning *no* (which is really a contraction of не есть = *there is not*) is used, and this always requires the genitive:

его́ здѣсь нѣтъ = *he is not here* (lit. *of him here there-is-not*)
ея́ тамъ нѣтъ = *she is not there*
ихъ нѣтъ до́ма = *they are not at home*
ея́ нѣтъ до́ма = *she is not at home*

[1] A national non-intoxicating drink made from rye and malt.

нѣтъ мѣста = *there is no room* (nom. sing. мѣсто, gen. sing. мѣста, nom. plur. мѣста́, gen. plur. мѣстъ)

меня́ тогда́ не́ было до́ма
I was not at home then

насъ тогда́ не́ было до́ма
we were not at home then

тебя́ уже́ не́ было до́ма тогда́
thou wast then no longer at home
(уже́ не or уже́ нѣтъ (*already not*) = *no longer*.)

васъ уже́ не́ было до́ма тогда́
you were no longer at home then

его́ ещё не́ было до́ма
he was not yet at home

ея́ ещё не́ было до́ма
she was not yet at home

меня́ здѣсь тогда́ уже́ не бу́детъ
I shall no longer be here then

насъ тогда́ уже́ не бу́детъ тамъ
we shall no longer be there then

ихъ вчера́ тамъ не́ было
they were not there yesterday

за́втра ихъ здѣсь уже́ не бу́детъ
to-morrow they will no longer be here

извóщика нѣтъ = *there is no cab*
нѣтъ дождя́ = *there is no rain*
нѣтъ мы́ла = *there is no soap*
нѣтъ полоте́нца = *there is no towel*
нѣтъ воды́ = *there is no water*
нѣтъ клопóвъ ? = *there are no bugs ?*

бо́льше нѣ́тъ мѣ́ста = *there is no more room*
бо́льше нѣ́тъ мѣ́стъ = *there are no more places*
де́негъ нѣ́тъ (nom. pl. де́ньги) = *there is no money*
де́негъ совсѣ́мъ нѣ́тъ = *there is no money at all*
копѣ́йки да́же нѣ́тъ = *not even a kopek*

In Russian two negatives are often necessary to express the negation, and they do not make an affirmative, e.g.

до́ма никого́ нѣ́тъ = *there is no one at home*
ничего́ здѣ́сь нѣ́тъ = *there is nothing here*
ни его́ ни ея́ нѣ́тъ до́ма = *neither he nor she is at home*
никако́й наде́жды нѣ́тъ = *there is no hope (of no sort)*
никого́ здѣ́сь ещё нѣ́тъ = *there is no one here yet*
никого́ уже́ не́ было тамъ = *there was no longer any one there*
никого́ не́ было до́ма = *there was nobody at home*
не́ было ничего́ = *there was nothing*

никого́ не бу́детъ = *there will be no one*
ничего́ не бу́детъ = *there will be nothing*

ничего́ не на́до } = *nothing is necessary*
ничего́ не ну́жно } (= *I don't want anything*)

(N.B. The direct object in any negative sentence after a transitive verb is always in the genitive, cf. *Second Russian Book*, chap. 17.)

CHAPTER 33

THE GENITIVE USED TO EXPRESS QUANTITY

ско́лько де́негъ? = *how much money?*
мно́го де́негъ = *a lot of money*
немно́го де́негъ = *a little money*
де́негъ ма́ло = *there is but little money*

ско́лько часо́въ ? = *how many hours ?*
нѣ́сколько часо́въ = *several hours*

ско́лько разъ ? = *how many times ?*
нѣ́сколько разъ = *several times*
мно́го разъ = *many times*

нѣ́сколько дней = *several days*
нѣ́сколько мѣ́сяцевъ = *several months*
нѣ́сколько лѣ́тъ = *several years* (lit. *summers*)

тутъ мно́го мѣ́ста = *there is plenty of room here*
тамъ ма́ло мѣ́ста = *there is little* (sc. *not enough*) *room there*
нѣ́сколько мѣ́стъ багажа́ = *several pieces* (lit. *places*) *of luggage*

ско́лько мѣ́стъ (багажа́) ? = *how many pieces of luggage ?*

всего́ оди́нъ чемода́нъ = *in all* (lit. *of all*) *one trunk*

ско́лько наро́ду (gen. sing. of наро́дъ) ! = *what a lot of people !*
тутъ мно́го наро́ду = *there are a lot of people here*
тамъ наро́ду { немно́го / ма́ло } = *there are not many people there*
ско́лько люде́й ? / ско́лько челове́къ ? } = *how many people ?*
нѣ́сколько люде́й / нѣ́сколько челове́къ } = *a few people, several*

ча́ю, пожа́луйста [1] = *some tea, please*
стака́нъ ча́ю = *a tumbler of tea*
ча́шка ча́ю = *a cup of tea*
ещё молока́, пожа́луйста = *some more milk, please*
ещё сли́вокъ = *some more cream*

[1] Always pronounced pazhálsta, cf. p. 12.

ещё ма́сла = *some more butter*
ещё хлѣ́ба = *some more bread*
со́ли, пожа́луйста = *some salt, please*
пе́рцу, пожа́луйста = *some pepper, please*

вотъ стака́нъ воды́ = *here is a glass of water*
вотъ стака́нъ ча́ю = *here is a glass of tea*
вотъ ча́шка ча́ю = *here is a cup of tea*
вотъ ча́шка ко́фею = *here is a cup of coffee*
вотъ кусо́чекъ са́хару = *here is a bit of sugar*
вотъ кусо́къ лимо́на = *here is a piece of lemon*
вотъ кусо́къ хлѣ́ба = *here is a piece of bread*

ещё немно́жко мя́са = *a little more meat*
ещё немно́жко ча́ю = *a little more tea*
ещё немно́жко хлѣ́ба = *a little more bread*
ещё нѣ́сколько бу́локъ = *a few more little loaves*
ещё нѣ́сколько пирожко́въ = *a few more little pies*

буты́лка вина́ = *a bottle of wine*
буты́лка пи́ва = *a bottle of beer*
рю́мка во́дки = *a glass of vodka*

кусо́къ мы́ла = *a piece of soap*

горя́чей воды́, пожа́луйста = *some hot water, please*
холо́дной воды́ = *some cold water*
чи́стой воды́ = *some clean water*
се́льтерской воды́ = *some soda water*
немно́жко горя́чей воды́ = *a little hot water*
кипячённой воды́ = *some boiled water*
кипятку́ = *some boiling water*

CHAPTER 34

USE OF THE NOMINATIVE AND GENITIVE AFTER NUMBERS

After 1 and all words compounded with 1, except 11, e.g. 21, 31, 101, the substantive is always in the nominative singular, e.g.:

три́дцать оди́нъ рубль	= 31 *roubles*
со́рокъ одна́ верста́	= 41 *versts*
оди́нъ кусо́къ	= *one piece* (e.g. *sugar*)
одно́ мѣ́сто	= *one piece* (*of luggage*)
одна́ копѣ́йка (or копе́йка)	= *one kopek*

In expressing *years* two different words are used; from 1–4, 21–24, 31–34, &c., inclusive, it is годъ:

оди́нъ годъ		=	*one year*
два	} го́да	= 2	} *years*
три		= 3	
четы́ре		= 4	
два́дцать оди́нъ годъ		= 21	*years*
три́дцать два го́да		= 32	*years*

and from 5–20, 25–30, &c., inclusive, it is лѣ́то = *summer*:

пять лѣ́тъ	= 5 *years*
де́сять лѣ́тъ	= 10 *years*

After the numbers 2, 3, 4, and after all compounds of them such as 22, 34, 43, 52, 63, 74, the substantive is always in the genitive singular, e.g.:

два (dva) человѣ́ка	*two men*
двѣ́ (dvyé) же́нщины	*two women*
два мѣ́ста	*two places*
(nom. plur. мѣ́ста)	

два бра́та	*two brothers*
дв‍ѣ́ сестры́	*two sisters*
(nom. plur. сёстры)	
два села́	*two villages*
(nom. plur. сёла)	
два дня	*two days*
дв‍ѣ́ но́чи	*two nights*
(nom. sing. ночь)	
два часа́	2 *o'clock* or 2 *hours*
дв‍ѣ́ мину́ты	2 *minutes*
два куска́ са́хару	*two pieces of sugar*
дв‍ѣ́ ча́шки ча́ю	*two cups of tea*
два рубля́ [1]	*two roubles*
дв‍ѣ́ коп‍ѣ́йки [2]	*two kopeks*
два пу́да [3]	*two puds*
дв‍ѣ́ версты́ [4]	*two versts*
три (tri) ма́льчика	*three boys*
три д‍ѣ́вочки	*three little girls*
три о́зера	*three lakes*
(nom. sing. о́зеро, nom. plur. озёра)	
три рубля́	*three roubles*
три коп‍ѣ́йки	*three kopeks*
три версты́	*three versts*

[1] 1 rouble = about 2*s*.
[2] 1 kopek = $\frac{1}{4}d$.
[3] 1 pud = about 37lb.
[4] 1 verst = about $\frac{2}{3}$ of a mile.

четы́ре (chetýre) сы́на	*four sons*
четы́ре до́чки	*four daughters*
четы́ре ружья́	*four rifles*
четы́ре рубля́	*four roubles*
четы́ре копѣ́йки	*four kopeks*
четы́ре версты́	*four versts*

If such words have to be put in the genitive, the noun is then in the genitive plural, e.g.:

э́тихъ двухъ людéй здѣсь ужé нѣтъ
these two people (men or *man and woman) are no longer here*

онъ отéцъ э́тихъ двухъ дѣтéй
he is the father of these two children

нѣтъ трёхъ мѣстъ
there are not three places

нѣтъ четырёхъ билéтовъ
there are not four tickets.

In certain expressions the words

двóе (dvóye)	=*a couple*
трóе (tróye)	
чéтверо (ché^{i}tvera)	

are used, and these always require the genitive plural e.g.:

двóе дѣтéй =*a couple of children*

Obs. These words must be used before nouns which are only used in the plural.

When an adjective is placed between a number and a noun it can be in either the nominative plural or genitive plural, e.g.:

два краси́вые ма́льчика
or два краси́выхъ ма́льчика } = *two pretty boys*

двѣ краси́выя дѣ́вочки
or двѣ краси́выхъ дѣ́вочки } = *two pretty little girls*

After the numbers 5–20, 25–30, 35–40, &c., inclusive, the substantive is always in the genitive plural, e.g. :

пять (руа́^{i}т') рубле́й	5 *roubles*
пять копѣ́къ	5 *kopeks*
пять су́токъ	5 *days and nights*
шесть (she^{i}st') дней	6 *days*
шесть ноче́й	6 *nights*
семь (sye^{i}m') мѣ́сяцевъ	7 *months*
семь недѣ́ль	7 *weeks*
во́семь (vó^{i}syem') часо́въ	8 *o'clock* or 8 *hours*
во́семь гри́венъ	80 *kopeks*

(nom. sing. гри́вна was 10 *kopeks* ; the name for the coin of 10 *kopeks* is now гри́венникъ)

де́вять (dyé^{i}vyat') сынове́й	9 *sons*
де́вять дочере́й	9 *daughters*
де́вять арши́нъ [1]	9 *arshins*

(nom. sing. арши́нъ, gen. plur. арши́нъ)

де́сять (dyé^{i}syat') человѣ́къ 10 *men* or 10 *people* (человѣ́къ is the gen. plur. of человѣ́къ, and after numbers is always used instead of люде́й ; it includes *men* and *women*)

де́сять мѣ́стъ	10 *places*
де́сять пудо́въ	10 *puds*

[1] 1 arshin = about a yard.

одѝннадцать часóвъ (adyínatsat')	11 *o'clock* or 11 *hours*
одѝннадцать ты́сячѣ	11,000
одѝннадцать десятѝнъ [1]	11 *desyatins*
двѣна́дцать часóвъ (dvyenátsat')	12 *o'clock* or 12 *hours*
двѣна́дцать ты́сячъ	12,000
двѣна́дцать вёрстъ	12 *versts*

трина́дцать	trinátsat'	13
четы́рнадцать	chetýrnatsat'	14
пятна́дцать	pitnátsat'	15
шестна́дцать	shesnátsat'	16
семна́дцать	s(y)emnátsat'	17
восемна́дцать	vos(y)emnátsat'	18
девятна́дцать	dyev(y)atnátsat'	19
два́дцать	dvátsat'	20
три́дцать	trítsat'	30
со́рокъ	sórak	40
пятьдеся́тъ	pidyisyát	50
шестьдеся́тъ	shesdyesyát	60
се́мьдесятъ	syé^{j}mdyesyat	70
во́семьдесятъ	vósyemdyesyat	80
девяно́сто	dyevyanósta	90
сто	sto	100
двѣсти	dvyé^{j}styi	200
три́ста	trista	300
четы́реста	chetýresta	400
пять сотъ	pyá^{j}t' sot	500
ты́сяча	týsyacha	1,000

[1] (nom. десятѝна) 1 desyatin = about 3 acres.

два́дцать арши́нъ	20 *arshins*
два́дцать-пять рубле́й	25 *roubles*
три́дцать пудо́въ	30 *puds*
со́рокъ десяти́нъ	40 *desyatins*
пятьдеся́тъ вёрстъ	50 *versts*

The expression $1\frac{1}{2}$ requires the gen. sing.:

полтора́ (paltará) го́да	*a year and a half*
полтора́ мѣ́сяца	*a month and a half*
полтора́ рубля́	*a rouble and a half*
полторы́ версты́	*a verst and a half*
полторы́ сажёни (nom. sing. са́жень)	*a fathom and a half*

The word for *half* (полови́на) is in many cases cut down as follows:

полстака́на	*half a tumblerful*
полбуты́лки	*a half-bottle*
полфу́нта	$\frac{1}{2}$ *lb.*
полчаса́	*half an hour*

CHAPTER 35

USE OF THE GENITIVE IN THE EXPRESSION OF TIME

кото́рый часъ? = *what time is it?*

часъ = *one o'clock* (lit. = *hour*)

полови́на второ́го
palavína ftaróva } = 1.30 (lit. = *a half of the second*, sc. *hour*)

два часа́ = 2 *o'clock*

чéтверть трéтьяго
chétvert' tré^{i}tyava } = 2.15 (lit. = *a quarter of the third*)
три часá = 3 *o'clock*
пять минýтъ четвёртаго = 3.5
четы́ре часá = 4 *o'clock*
безъ пяти́ (минýтъ) пять = 4.55 (lit. = *without* 5 *min.* 5)
пять часóвъ = 5 *o'clock*
двáдцать минýтъ шестóго
dvátsat' minút shestóva } = 5.20
шесть часóвъ = 6 *o'clock*
дéсять минýтъ седьмóго
dyé^{i}s(y)at' minút syed'móva } = 6.10
семь часóвъ = 7 *o'clock*
двáдцать пять минýтъ восьмóго
dvátsat' pya^{i}t' minút vas'móva } = 7.25
вóсемь часóвъ = 8 *o'clock*
безъ двадцати́ дéвять = 8.40
половúна девя́таго
dyevyátava } = 8.30
дéвять часóвъ = 9 *o'clock*
чéтверть деся́таго
dyesyátava } = 9.15
безъ чéтверти дéсять
bes chétvertyi } = 9.45
дéсять часóвъ = 10 *o'clock*
половúна одúннадцатаго = 10.30
безъ двадцати́ пяти́ одúннадцать = 10.35
одúннадцать часóвъ = 11 *o'clock*
безъ чéтверти двѣнáдцать = 11.45
двѣнáдцать часóвъ = 12 *o'clock*
половúна пéрваго = 12.30 (lit. = *half of the first*, sc. *hour*)
безъ десяти́ минýтъ часъ = 12.50

CHAPTER 36

USE OF THE GENITIVE IN EXPRESSING THE DATE

тре́тьяго дня = *the day before yesterday* (lit. *of the third day*)
пе́рваго [1] января́ = *on the 1st of January*
второ́го февраля́ = *on the 2nd of February*
тре́тьяго ма́рта = *on the 3rd of March*
четвёртаго апре́ля = *on the 4th of April*
пя́таго ма́я = *on the 5th of May*
шесто́го ію́ня = *on the 6th of June*
седьмо́го ію́ля = *on the 7th of July*
восьмо́го а́вгуста = *on the 8th of August*
девя́таго сентября́ = *on the 9th of September*
деся́таго октября́ = *on the 10th of October*
оди́ннадцатаго ноября́ = *on the 11th of November*
две́на́дцатаго декабря́ = *on the 12th of December*
трина́дцатаго января́ = *on the 13th of January*
четы́рнадцатаго февраля́ = *on the 14th of February*
пятна́дцатаго ма́рта = *on the 15th of March*
шестна́дцатаго апре́ля = *on the 16th of April*
семна́дцатаго ма́я = *on the 17th of May*
восемна́дцатаго ію́ня = *on the 18th of June*
девятна́дцатаго ію́ля = *on the 19th of July*
двадца́таго а́вгуста = *on the 20th of August*
два́дцать пе́рваго сентября́ = *on the 21st of September*
два́дцать второ́го октября́ = *on the 22nd of October*
тридца́таго ноября́ = *on the 30th of November*
три́дцать пе́рваго декабря́ = *on the 31st of December*

[1] sc. числа́, gen. sing. of число́ = *date* or *number*.

котóраго числá вы бýдете дóма ?
what date will you be at home ?

but котóрое
or какóе } числó сегóдня ?
what date is it to-day ?

сегóдня пéрвое января́
to-day is the 1st of January

in the nominative.

CHAPTER 37

EXPRESSION OF COMPARISON

Comparison is expressed in two ways, either by чѣмъ (or нéжели) followed by the nominative, or by means of the genitive of comparison, e.g. :

э́то óчень хорóшій пóѣздъ
this is a very good train

(1) э́тотъ пóѣздъ лýчше чѣмъ тотъ
(2) э́тотъ пóѣздъ лýчше того́
this train is better than that

э́то óчень плохáя дорóга
this is a very bad road

(1) э́та дорóга хýже чѣмъ та
(2) э́та дорóга хýже той
this road is worse than that

э́то óчень большóе óзеро
this is a very large lake

(1) э́то о́зеро бо́льше чѣмъ то
(2) э́то о́зеро бо́льше того́
this lake is bigger than that

э́то о́чень ма́ленькій домъ
this is a very small house

(1) э́ти дома́ ме́ньше чѣмъ тѣ
(2) э́ти дома́ ме́ньше тѣхъ
these houses are smaller than those

э́то о́чень высо́кая гора́
this is a very high hill

э́ти го́ры вы́ше тѣхъ
these hills (or *mountains*) *are higher than those*

тѣ го́ры ни́же э́тихъ
those hills are lower than these

Нева́—широ́кая, глубо́кая и бы́страя рѣка́
the Neva is a broad, deep, and swift river

Нева́ гора́здо ши́ре и глу́бже и быстрѣе Те́мзы
the Neva is much broader, deeper, and more rapid than the Thames

но Нева́ о́чень коро́ткая рѣка́
but the Neva is a very short river

Нева́ гора́здо коро́че Те́мзы
the Neva is much shorter than the Thames

Те́мза—у́зкая, ме́лкая и ти́хая рѣка́
the Thames is a narrow, shallow, and slow river

Те́мза гора́здо у́же [1] и ме́льче и ти́ше Невы́
the Thames is much narrower, shallower, and slower than the Neva

но Те́мза дово́льно дли́нная ре́ка́
but the Thames is a fairly long river

Те́мза гора́здо длинне́е Невы́
the Thames is much longer than the Neva

э́то о́чень дорога́я вещь
that is a very precious (sc. *expensive*) *thing*

ва́ше изда́ніе сочине́ній Пу́шкина доро́же и лу́чше моего́
your edition of the works of Pushkin is more expensive and better than mine

э́то о́чень дешёвая бума́га
that is very cheap paper

моё изда́ніе стихотворе́ній Ле́рмонтова дешёвле и ху́же ва́шего
my edition of the poems of Lermontov is cheaper and worse than yours

э́то о́чень ста́рая ло́шадь
that is a very old horse

э́то совсѣмъ молода́я ло́шадь
that is quite a young horse

онъ гора́здо ста́рше меня́
he is much older than I

я гора́здо моло́же его́
I am much younger than he

[1] у́же =*narrower*, уже́ =*already*.

ру́сскій язы́къ о́чень тру́дный
the Russian language is very difficult

нѣме́цкій и францу́зскій языки́ то́же тру́дные
the German and French languages are also difficult

но а́нглійскій язы́къ лёгкій
but the English language is easy

а́нглійскій язы́къ ле́гче францу́зскаго и та́кже ле́гче нѣме́цкаго
the English language is easier than French and also easier than German

ру́сскій язы́къ труднѣе а́нглійскаго, и да́же труднѣе нѣме́цкаго и францу́зскаго ; онъ труднѣе всѣхъ
the Russian language is more difficult than English, and even more difficult than German and French ; it is the most difficult of all

мой чемода́нъ пусто́й и совсѣмъ лёгкій
my trunk is empty and quite light

онъ гора́здо ле́гче ва́шего
it is much lighter than yours

да, мой чемода́нъ совсѣмъ по́лный и сли́шкомъ тяжёлый
yes, my trunk is quite full and too heavy

онъ гора́здо тяжелѣе (or тяже́ле) ва́шего
it is much heavier than yours

икра́ тепе́рь доро́же пре́жняго
caviar is now dearer than formerly

Пётръ ста́рше Па́вла
Peter is older than Paul

Серёжа ста́рше Ми́ши
Serge is older than Michael

Ма́ша и Ка́тя моло́же Со́ни
Mary and Kate are younger than Sophia

у́тро ве́чера мудрене́е
morning than evening is wiser (proverb)

сего́дня холодне́е вчера́шняго (sc. дня)
to-day it is colder than yesterday('s day)

сего́дня тепле́е вчера́шняго (sc. дня)
to-day it is warmer than yesterday('s day)

она́ краси́ве́е свое́й сестры́
she is more beautiful than her (own) sister

онъ сильне́е меня, онъ о́чень си́льный
he is stronger than I, he is very strong

э́тотъ ко́фе сли́шкомъ сла́бый
this coffee is too weak

э́тотъ чай сли́шкомъ кре́пкій
this tea is too strong

э́тотъ ко́фе кре́пче = *this coffee is stronger*

э́тотъ чай слабе́е = *this tea is weaker*

э́та вода́ совсе́мъ холо́дная
this water is quite cold

э́тотъ супъ сли́шкомъ горя́чій
this soup is too hot

вотъ э́та вода́ бу́детъ горячье́
here this water will be hotter

э́то вино́ кр'ѣпче того́
this wine is stronger than that

э́то пи́во слабѣе того́
this beer is weaker than that

э́ти пирожки́ о́чень вку́сные
these little pies are very nice

они́ гора́здо вкусн'ѣе т'ѣхъ
they are much nicer than those

э́то о́чень бога́тый го́родъ
this is a very rich town

Москва́ бога́че Петрогра́да
Moscow is richer than Petrograd

Не́вскій Проспе́ктъ о́чень дли́нная, широ́кая и краси́вая у́лица
the Nevski Prospect is a very long, broad, and beautiful street

онъ длинн'ѣе, ши́ре и краси́в'ѣе всѣхъ други́хъ у́лицъ
it is longer, broader, and more beautiful than all other streets

нигд'ѣ н'ѣтъ тако́й дли́нной, широ́кой и краси́вой у́лицы
nowhere (sc. *else*) *is there such a long, broad, and beautiful street*

э́то о́чень ско́рый по́'ѣздъ
this is a very fast train

но тотъ былъ ещё скор'ѣе
but that (*other*) *one was still faster*

э́то о́чень ти́хій (*or* ме́дленный) по́'ѣздъ
this is a very slow train

а тотъ бу́детъ ещё ти́ше
but that (other) one will be still slower

скорѣе (*or* по-скорѣе) ! = *quick ! hurry up !*
ти́ше (*or* по-ти́ше) ! = *go slow ! not so fast !*

The words for *far* and *near* are frequently used adverbially :

теа́тръ совсѣмъ бли́зко
the theatre is quite near

ихъ имѣніе бли́зко на́шего (*or* отъ на́шего)
their property is near ours

Петрогра́дъ отсю́да бли́же чѣмъ Москва́
Petrograd is nearer from here (lit. *hence*) *than Moscow*

вокза́лъ о́чень далеко́ (*or* далёко)
the station (sc. *big station* or *terminus*) *is very far*

при́стань ещё да́льше
the landing-stage is still further

гости́ница отсю́да далеко́
the hotel is far from here

вокза́лъ немно́жко да́льше гости́ницы
the station is a little further than the hotel

гости́ница бли́же отсю́да чѣмъ вокза́лъ
the hotel is nearer here than the station

The word по is often added to the comparative :

по-бо́льше молока́, пожа́луйста
rather more milk, please

по-ме́ньше мя́са, пожа́луйста
rather less meat, please

Adverbial comparatives:

онъ всегда́ бо́ленъ, бо́лѣе и́ли ме́нѣе
he is always ill, more or less

и такъ да́лѣе (и.т.д.)
and so forth

CHAPTER 38

VOCABULARY

The human body, health, &c.

тѣ́ло *n.*	tyé[a]la	*body*
душа́ *f.*	dushá	*soul*
духъ *m.*	dukh	*spirit*
голова́ *f.*	galavá	*head*
ше́я *f.*	shéya	*neck*
лицо́ *n.*	lyitsó	*face* (also *person*)
глазъ(-á) *m.* (*pl.*)	glas, glazá	*eye(s)*
носъ *m.*	nos	*nose*
щека́ *f.*	shcheká	*cheek*
ротъ *m.*	rot	*mouth*
у́хо *n.*	úkho	*ear*
(у́ши *pl.*	úshy	*ears*)
лобъ *m.*	lop	*forehead*
зати́локъ *m.*	zatýlak	*back of head*
го́рло *n.*	górla	*throat*
зубъ *m.*	zup	*tooth*
губа́ *f.*	gubá	*lip*
дёсна *f.*	dyósna	*gum*
язы́къ *m.*	yazýk	*tongue*
усы́ *m. pl.*	usý	*moustache*
борода́ *f.*	baradá	*beard*
подборо́докъ *m.*	padbaródak	*chin*
бакенба́рды *f. pl.*	bakenbárdy	*whiskers*
во́лосы *m. pl.*	vólosy	*hair* (collective)
ко́жа *f.*	kózha	*skin*

плечó *n.*	plyechó	*shoulder*
(плéчи *pl.*	plyé^{i}chi	*shoulders*)
спинá *f.*	spiná	*back*
рукá *f.*	ruká	*arm, hand*
кисть *f.*	kist'	*wrist*
лóкоть *m.*	lókat'	*elbow*
пáлецъ *m.*	pályets	*finger, toe*
нóготь *m.*	nógat'	*nail*
ногá *f.*	nagá	*leg, foot*
бедрó *n.*	b(y)edró	*hip*
колѣ́но(-и) *n.* (*pl.*)	kalyé^{a}na	*knee(s)*
ступéнь *m.*	stupyé^{i}n'	*foot*
пятá *f.*	pyatá	*heel*
подóшва *f.*	padóshva	*sole*
живóтъ *m.*	zhyvót	*stomach*
желýдокъ [1] *m.*	zhelúdak	*stomach*
сéрдце *n.*	s(y)é^{a}rtse	*heart*
лёгкія *n. pl.* (*adj.*)	lyókhkiya	*lungs*
кость *f.*	kó^{i}st'	*bone*
кровь *f.*	kró^{i}f'	*blood*
боль *f.*	bó^{i}l'	*pain*
здорóвье *n.*	zdaróvye	*health*
болѣ́знь *f.*	balyé^{i}zn'	*illness*
лихорáдка *f.*	lyikharátka	*fever*
воспалéніе *n.*	vaspalyé^{i}niye	*inflammation*
температýра *f.*	tyemperatúra	*temperature*
грáдусникъ *m.*	grádusnyik	*thermometer*
грáдусъ *m.*	grádus	*degree*
кáшель *m.*	káshel'	*cough*
простýда *f.*	prastúda	*cold in the chest*
нáсморкъ *m.*	násmark	*cold in the head*
чахóтка *f.*	chakhótka	*consumption*
дóкторъ *m.*	dóktar	*doctor*
врачъ *m.*	vrach	*doctor*
лекáрство *n.*	lyekárstva	*medicine*
лечéбница *f.*	lyechébnitsa	*nursing-home*
аптéка *f.*	aptyé^{a}ka	*chemist's*

[1] A politer word.

CHAPTER 39

VOCABULARY

Animal and plant life

жизнь *f.*	zhyzn'	*life*
смерть *f.*	sm(y)é^{i}rt'	*death*
живóтное[1] *n.* (*adj.*)	zhyvótnoye[1]	*animal*
звѣрь *m.*	zv(y)é^{i}r'	*beast*
лóшадь *f.*	lóshat'	*horse*
лошáдка *f.*	lashátka	*horse*
жеребёнокъ *m.*	zherebyónak	*foal*
конь *m.*	kó^{i}n'	*steed*
собáка *f.*	sabáka	*dog*
пёсъ *m.*	pyos	*hound*
щенóкъ *m.*	shchenók	*puppy*
котъ *m.*	kot	*cat*
кóшка *f.*	kóshka	*cat*
котёнокъ *m.*	katyónak	*kitten*
быкъ *m.*	byk	*ox*
корóва *f.*	karóva	*cow*
телёнокъ *m.*	tyelyónak	*calf*
овцá *f.*	aftsá	*sheep*
барáнъ *m.*	barán	*ram, sheep*
барáшекъ *m.*	baráshek	*lamb*
ягнёнокъ *m.*	yagnyónak	*lamb*
козёлъ *m.*	kazyól	*he-goat*
козá *f.*	kazá	*she-goat*
козлёнокъ *m.*	kazlyónak	*kid*
свинья́ *f.*	svinyá	*pig*
поросёнокъ *m.*	parasyónak	*young pig*
пѣту́хъ *m.*	p(y)etúkh	*cock*
ку́рица *f.*	kúritsa	*hen*
цыплёнокъ *m.*	tsyplyónak	*chicken*
осёлъ *m.*	asyól	*donkey*
верблю́дъ *m.*	verblyút	*camel*
слонъ *m.*	slon	*elephant*

[1] Cf. note 1 on p. 71.

левъ *m.*	lyé^{a}f	*lion*
тигръ *m.*	tyígr	*tiger*
медвѣдь *m.*	medv(y)é^{i}t'	*bear*
волкъ *m.*	volk	*wolf*
лисá *f.*	lyisá	*fox*
лисúца *f.*	lyisítsa	*fox*
зáяцъ [1] *m.*	záyats	*hare*
крóликъ *m.*	królyik	*rabbit*
бѣлка *f.*	byé^{a}lka	*squirrel*
собóль *f.*	sabó^{i}l'	*sable*
олéнь *m.*	alyé^{i}n'	*deer*
лось *m.*	ló^{i}s'	*elk*
обезьяна *f.*	abezyána	*monkey*
лягýшка *f.*	lyagúshka	*frog*
гнѣздó *n.*	gnyezdó	*nest*
птúца *f.*	ptyítsa	*bird*
орёлъ [2] *m.*	aryól	*eagle*
журáвль *m.*	zhurá^{i}vl'	*crane*
гóлубь [3] *m.*	gólup'	*dove, pigeon*
соловéй *m.*	salavyéi	*nightingale*
воробéй *m.*	varabyéi	*sparrow*
лáсточка *f.*	lástachka	*swallow*
змѣя *f.*	zmeyá	*snake*
рыба *f.*	rýba	*fish*
лососúна *f.*	lasasína	*salmon*
сёмга *f.*	syómga	*salmon*
сельдь *f.*	syé^{i}l'd'	*herring*
насѣкóмое [4] *n.*	nas(y)ekómoye [4]	*insect*
букáшка *f.*	bukáshka	*insect*
мýха *f.*	múkha	*fly*
комáръ *m.*	kamár	*gnat, mosquito*
пчелá *f.*	pchelá	*bee*
осá *f.*	asá	*wasp*
блохá *f.*	blakhá	*flea*

[1] Gen. sing. зáйца.

[2] Also the name of the town *Orel*, pron. Aryól.

[3] голýбчикъ (*m.*), голýбушка (*f.*) = *my dear.*

[4] Cf. note 1 on p. 71.

тарака́нъ *m.*	tarakán	*cockroach*
клопъ *m.*	klop	*bug*
расте́ніе *n.*	rastyé^{i}niye	*plant*
де́рево *n.*	dyéreva	*tree*
дубъ *m.*	dup	*oak*
берёза *f.*	beryóza	*birch-tree*
то́поль *m.*	tópal'	*poplar*
сосна́ *f.*	sasná	*Scotch fir*
(ель) ёлка *f.*	yólka	*spruce fir*
цвѣто́къ *m.*	tsv(y)etók	*a blossom*
цвѣты́ *m. pl.*	tsv(y)etý	*flowers*
ро́за *f.*	róza	*rose*
фіа́лка *f.*	fiyálka	*violet*
гвозди́ка *f.*	gvazdyíka	*pink*
макъ *m.*	mak	*poppy*
незабу́дка *f.*	nyezabútka	*forget-me-not*
я́блоня *f.*	yáblonya	*apple-tree*
сире́нь *f.*	siré^{i}n'	*lilac*
рожь *f.*	ró^{i}sh	*rye*
пшени́ца *f.*	pshenyítsa	*wheat*
ячме́нь *m.*	yachmé^{i}n'	*barley*
овёсъ *m.*	avyós	*oats*
гречи́ха *f.*	grechíkha	*buckwheat*
про́со *n.*	prósa	*millet*
кукуру́зъ *m.*	kukurús	*maize*
трава́ *f.*	travá	*grass*
сѣно *n.*	syé^{a}na	*hay*
урожа́й *m.*	urazhái	*harvest* (good)
неурожа́й *m.*	nyeurazhái	*bad harvest*
за́суха *f.*	zásukha	*drought*
жа́тва *f.*	zhátva	*reaping*
снопъ *m.*	snop	*sheaf*
садъ *m.*	sat	*garden*
огоро́дъ *m.*	agarót	*kitchen garden*
доро́жка *f.*	daróshka	*path*
цвѣтни́къ *m.*	tsv(y)etnyík	*flower-bed*
гря́дка *f.*	gryátka	*vegetable-bed*

CHAPTER 40

THE VERB *TO HAVE*

The Present

Although there is a verb *to have*[1] in Russian, by far the most common means of expressing the idea is by a paraphrase *to be in the possession of* followed by the genitive; this expression is formed by the preposition у = *in the possession of* (also *at the house of* or *near*), by the genitive of the personal pronoun, and by есть (ye^{i}st') = *is*, which is all that is left of the present tense of the verb *to be*, e.g.:

у меня́ есть	= *I have*
у тебя́ есть	= *thou hast*
у него́ есть	= *he has, it has*
у неё есть	= *she has*
у насъ есть	= *we have*
у васъ есть	= *you have*
у нихъ есть	= *they have*

The word есть is omitted more often than not, and can also be placed first.

у меня́ соба́ка у меня́ есть соба́ка есть у меня́ соба́ка	= *I have a dog*
but N.B.	
соба́ка у меня́	= *I have the dog* or *the dog is with me*

[1] Inf. и́мѣть, pres. и́мѣю, и́мѣешь, и́мѣетъ, и́мѣемъ, и́мѣете, и́мѣютъ.

у тебя́ кни́га у тебя́ есть кни́га есть у тебя́ кни́га	= *thou hast a book*
but	
кни́га у тебя́	= *thou hast the book*

It will have been noticed that the words его́, ея́, and ихъ are prefixed by the letter н; this н is inserted whenever these words are preceded and governed by a preposition, e.g.:

у него́ письмо́ у него́ есть письмо́ есть у него́ письмо́	= *he has a letter*
but	
письмо́ у него́	= *he has the letter*
у ней до́чка у ней есть до́чка есть у ней дочка	= *she has a daughter*
but	
до́чка у ней	= *the daughter is with her*
у насъ па́спортъ	= *we have a passport*
па́спортъ у насъ	= *we have the passport*
у васъ де́ньги	= *you have money*
де́ньги у васъ	= *you have the money*
у нихъ биле́ты	= *they have tickets*
биле́ты у нихъ	= *they have the tickets*

When the verb is used interrogatively the interrogative particle -ли may be added, but is not necessary if the

voice is sufficiently raised to indicate interrogation; in indefinite questions есть must be added, e.g.:

е́сть ли у тебя́ кошелёкъ ? есть у тебя́ кошелёкъ ? у тебя́ есть кошелёкъ ? у тебя́ кошелёкъ есть ? кошелёкъ у тебя́ есть ?	= *hast thou a purse ?*

but

кошелёкъ у тебя́ ? у тебя́ ли кошелёкъ ?	= *hast thou the purse ?*

е́сть ли у васъ де́ньги ? есть у васъ де́ньги ? у васъ есть де́ньги ? де́ньги у васъ есть ? де́ньги есть у васъ ?	= *have you any money ?*

but

де́ньги у васъ ? у васъ ли де́ньги ?	= *have you the money ?*

Phrases containing the word 'to have'

како́й у васъ краси́вый домъ
what a beautiful house you have

кака́я у васъ прекра́сная кварти́ра
what a splendid flat you have

какі́е у васъ прелéстные глаза́
what exquisite eyes you have

у васъ о́чень плохо́й видъ
you look very ill (lit. *have a bad look*)

у него́ о́чень здоро́вый видъ
he looks very well

ско́лько у васъ дѣте́й ?
how many children have you ?

ско́лько у васъ мѣсть багажа́ ?
how many pieces of luggage have you ?

у насъ всего́ тро́е дѣте́й
we have in all three children

у меня́ четы́ре мѣста багажа́
I have four pieces of luggage

у меня́ о́чень мно́го вещей
I have a great many things

у неё о́чень ма́ло де́негъ
she has very little money

у нихъ нѣсколько имѣній
they have several properties

у меня́ нѣсколько изда́ній э́той кни́ги
I have several editions of this book

у васъ соба́ка есть ?
have you a dog ?

у меня́ да́же двѣ
I have even got two

у нихъ есть свой автомоби́ль
they have their own motor-car

у неё есть свой домъ
she has her own house

у насъ есть свои́ экипа́жи
we have our own carriages

у э́того ребёнка о́чень краси́вые глаза́
this child has very beautiful eyes

у э́той ба́рышни о́чень хоро́шіе зу́бы
this young lady has very good teeth

у э́той да́мы прелéстные во́лосы
this lady has exquisite hair

у э́того человѣ́ка о́чень большо́й ротъ
this man has a very large mouth

у э́того старика́ дли́нная борода́
this old man has a long beard

у э́того ма́льчика о́чень мно́го воло́съ (gen. pl.)
this boy has a great deal of hair

у э́той дѣ́вушки о́чень ма́ленькія у́ши
this girl has very small ears

у э́того человѣ́ка о́чень широ́кія плéчи
this man has very broad shoulders

у э́той же́нщины о́чень непрія́тный го́лосъ
this woman has a very unpleasant voice

у ва́шей соба́ки прелéстная голова́
your dog has a lovely head

у э́того человѣ́ка большія́ у́ши, ма́ленькіе глаза́, коро́ткія но́ги и дли́нныя ру́ки (у́ши, глаза́, но́ги, and ру́ки : nom. plur.)
this man has large ears, small eyes, short legs, and long arms

у ка́ждаго человѣка два у́ха, два гла́за, двѣ ноги́ и двѣ рукй (gen. sing.)
every man has two ears, two eyes, two legs, and two arms

у меня́ просту́да = *I have a cold in the chest*
у него́ на́сморкъ = *he has a cold in the head*
у ней ка́шель = *she has a cough*

CHAPTER 41

NEGATION OF THE VERB *TO HAVE*

(cf. p. 109.)

у меня́ нѣтъ соба́ки = *I have no dog*
у меня́ нѣтъ де́негъ = *I have no money*
у него́ нѣтъ роди́телей = *he has no parents*
у ней нѣтъ дѣте́й = *she has no children*
у насъ нѣтъ биле́товъ = *we have no tickets*
у нихъ нѣтъ багажа́ = *they have no luggage*

у меня́ нѣтъ ни соба́ки ни ко́шки
I have neither dog nor cat

у него́ ни отца́ ни ма́тери нѣтъ, онъ сирота́
he has neither father nor mother, he is an orphan

у ней нѣтъ ни бра́та ни сестры́, она́ совсѣмъ одна́
she has neither brother nor sister, she is quite alone

у насъ и па́спортъ и биле́ты есть
we have both passport and tickets

па́спортъ у нихъ есть, а биле́товъ нѣтъ
they have a passport, but no tickets

Questions in the Present

are often asked negatively :

нѣтъ ли у тебя́ пера́ ?
hast thou a pen ?

перо́ есть, а бума́ги нѣтъ
I have a pen, but no paper

бума́га есть, а черни́лъ нѣтъ
I have paper, but no ink

черни́ла тутъ, и вотъ каранда́шъ
here is the ink, and here is a pencil

нѣтъ ли у васъ де́негъ ?
have you any money ?

CHAPTER 42

TO HAVE (CONTINUED)

The Past

of *to have* is expressed as follows :

у меня́ былъ братъ	= *I had a brother*
у меня́ была́ сестра́	= *I had a sister*
у меня́ бы́ло де́ло	= *I had business*
у меня́ бы́ли роди́тели	= *I had parents*

that is to say, the verb *was* must agree with what in Russian is the subject but in English is the object in such phrases ; similarly :

у него́ была́ соба́ка = *he had a dog*
у неё была́ домъ = *she had a house*
у нихъ бы́ло имѣ́ніе = *they had a property*
у моего́ отца́ бы́ло имѣ́ніе = *my father had a property*
у моей ма́тери бы́ло имѣ́ніе = *my mother had a property*

The neuter singular бы́ло is sometimes used even when the object referred to is in the plural, e.g. :

у него́ бы́ло двѣ до́чери = *he had two daughters*
у неё бы́ло два сы́на = *she had two sons*

When negatived the neuter is invariably used, the word не withdrawing the accent from the verb.

у меня́ не́-было де́негъ = *I had no money*
у него́ не́-было ничего́ = *he had nothing*
у неё не́-было наде́жды = *she had no hope*
у меня́ не́-было ни одно́й копѣ́йки = *I hadn't a single kopek*
у него́ не́-было никаки́хъ де́негъ = *he had no money at all*
у неё никогда́ не́-было дѣте́й = *she never had any children*
у насъ не́-было никого́ = *we had no one*

When using the word никто́ = *no one*, the preposition divides the ни from the кто.

ни у кого́ не́ было де́негъ = *no one had any money*

The Future

of *to have* is expressed as follows :

у меня́ бу́детъ автомоби́ль = *I shall have a motor-car*
у тебя́ бу́детъ ло́шадь = *thou wilt have a horse*
у него́ бу́детъ домъ = *he will have a house*
у неё бу́детъ садъ = *she will have a garden*
у насъ бу́детъ роя́ль = *we shall have a grand piano*

у васъ бу́детъ мно́го багажа́ ?
shall you have much luggage ?

у нихъ бу́детъ о́чень ма́ло вре́мени
they will have very little time

у него́ бу́дутъ го́сти (nom. sing. гость) = *he will have visitors*
у неё бу́дутъ де́ньги = *she will have money*

In negative sentences the third pers. singular is always used :

у меня́ не бу́детъ де́негъ = *I shall have no money*
у насъ не бу́детъ мѣ́ста = *we shall have no room*
у нихъ не бу́детъ гостей́ = *they will have no visitors*
у меня́ ничего́ не бу́детъ = *I shall have nothing*

CHAPTER 43

PREPOSITIONS WHICH GOVERN THE GENITIVE

у = *at the house of, near*

It must be understood that this preposition is often used in the above meanings as well as in that of ' in the possession of ', e.g. :

я былъ у неё вчера́ = *I was at her house,* or, *I went to see her yesterday*
она́ вчера́ была́ у насъ = *she came to see us yesterday*
вы бы́ли у нихъ вчера́ ? = *did you go to see them yesterday ?*

тре́тьяго дня я былъ у ва́шего отца́
the day before yesterday I went to see your father (lit. *of the third day I was at your father's*)

трéтьяго дня онá былá у менá
she came to see me the day before yesterday

онъ сегóдня у неё = *he is at her house to-day*
онá сегóдня у негó = *she is at his house to-day*

онъ бýдетъ у насъ сегóдня
he is coming to see us to-day

вы бýдете у нихъ сегóдня ?
are you going to see them to-day ?

я бýду у нихъ зáвтра
I am going to see them to-morrow

послѣзáвтра онú бýдутъ у насъ
they are coming to see us the day after to-morrow

мы бýдемъ у неё сегóдня
we are going to see her to-day

ты бýдешь у негó зáвтра ?
art thou going to see him to-morrow ?

Obs. When the preposition does not directly govern the words егó, её, and ихъ, i.e. when these words are used in the meaning of *his, her*, and *their*, the н is not inserted, e.g. :

у егó отцá бы́ло имѣ́ніе
his father had a property

у егó мáтери было óчень мнóго дéнегъ
his mother had a great deal of money

у её брáта былъ хорóшій роя́ль
her brother had a nice grand piano

у её сестры́ óчень красúвые вóлосы
her sister has very beautiful hair

у ихъ роди́телей о́чень больша́я библіо́тека
their parents have a very large library

у ихъ дѣте́й о́чень мно́го книгъ
their children have a great many books

безъ = *without*

(before words beginning with two consonants difficult to pronounce : ѣ безо)

онъ безъ биле́та = *he is without a ticket*
безъ па́спорта нельзя́ = *without a passport it is impossible*
безъ э́того нельзя́ = *this is indispensible* (*it is impossible without this*)
э́то бы́ло безъ меня́ = *that was in my absence*
безо всего́ = *without anything* (lit. *all*)

безъ со́ли, безъ хлѣба—полови́на обѣда
without salt and without bread is only half a dinner (proverb)

для = *for*

для кого́ э́то письмо́ ? = *for whom is this letter ?*
для чего́ э́то такъ ? = *why is this like that ?* (lit. *for what*)

э́то для меня́ сли́шкомъ до́рого
that is too dear for me

э́то для ней не дово́льно хорошо́
that is not good enough for her

до = *up to, until, before*

отъ Петрогра́да до Москвы́
from Petrograd to Moscow

отъ Ло́ндона до Пари́жа
from London to Paris

онъ до сихъ поръ тамъ
he is there till now (lit. *until these times*)

она́ до сихъ поръ здѣсь
she is still here

до э́того онъ былъ тамъ
until now (or *before this*) *he was there*

э́то бы́ло до меня́
this was before my time

до свида́нія = *till we meet again*

изъ = *from out of*

(before words beginning with two consonants difficult to pronounce : изо)

э́то письмо́ изъ Росси́и
this letter is from Russia

э́та телегра́мма изъ Ло́ндона
this telegram is from London

э́та откры́тка изъ О́ксфорда
this postcard is from Oxford

э́та откры́тка изъ Ке́мбриджа
this postcard is from Cambridge

N.B. оди́нъ изъ нихъ = *one of them* (masc.)
оди́нъ изъ ихъ друзе́й = *one of their friends*
одна́ изъ ихъ лошаде́й = *one of their horses*

оди́нъ изъ мои́хъ знако́мыхъ
one of my acquaintances

оди́нъ изъ э́тихъ люде́й
one of these people

отъ = *away from*

(before words beginning with two consonants difficult to pronounce : ото).

э́то письмо́ отъ моего́ дру́га
this letter is from my friend

отъ кого́ э́та телегра́мма ?
from whom is this telegram ?

неизвѣ́стно отъ кого́ э́та откры́тка
I don't know (it is not known) from whom this postcard is

э́ти пи́сьма отъ мои́хъ друзе́й
these letters are from my friends

сюда́ отъ нихъ далеко́
it is far from them here (lit. *hither*)

сюда́ отъ Москвы́ о́чень далеко́
it is a long way here from Moscow

туда́ отъ насъ бли́зко
from our house there (lit. *thither*) *is not far*

туда́ отъ Петрогра́да совсѣ́мъ бли́зко
it is quite near from Petrograd there

вотъ письмо́ отъ него́ = *here is a letter from him*

вотъ письмо́ отъ его́ жены́
here is a letter from his wife

вотъ откры́тка отъ неё
here is a postcard from her

вотъ откры́тка отъ её му́жа
here is a postcard from her husband

ва́ше письмо́ отъ пе́рваго февраля́
your letter of the 1*st of February*

о́коло = *about, near, around*

о́коло двухъ рубле́й = *about two roubles*
стулъ о́коло стола́ = *the chair is near the table*

по́слѣ = *after* (also = *afterwards*)

по́слѣ за́втрака = *after lunch* (= *in the afternoon*)
по́слѣ ча́я (or ча́ю) = *after tea*
по́слѣ о́бѣда = *after dinner*

кро́мѣ = *besides, except*

всѣ кро́мѣ меня́ = *all except me*
кро́мѣ того́ = *besides that*

вмѣ́сто = *instead of*

во́злѣ = *alongside*

доро́га во́злѣ рѣки́ = *a road alongside the river*

CHAPTER 44

THE DATIVE

Substantives

The dative singular endings are :

Hard	Masculine Neuter	-у
Soft	Masculine Neuter	-ю

and

Feminine -ѣ

for both hard and soft nouns, but feminine nouns in -ія have dative singular in -іи.

Examples:

Hard Nouns	Masculine	магази́ну, биле́ту, столу́
	Neuter	мѣ́сту, селу́, о́бществу
	Feminine	ба́бѣ, ко́мнатѣ, избѣ́
Soft Nouns	Masculine	автомоби́лю, слу́чаю, соловью́, Васи́лію
	Neuter	по́лю, ружью́, имѣ́нію
	Feminine	недѣлѣ, статьѣ́, а́рміи, Россі́и

The dative singular of the other words mentioned on pp. 90–91 is:

концу́	дню
послу́	огню́
ребёнку	дѣ́вочкѣ

Feminine surnames in -ова, -ева, -ина have dative singular in -ой: Па́вловой, Арсе́ньевой, Карса́виной (cf. pp. 54, 104).

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь have dative singular in -и, e.g.:

ло́шади	це́ркви
ве́щи	ма́тери
	до́чери

Neuter nouns in -я have dative singular in -ени, e.g.:

врéмени

The dative plural of all nouns, pronouns, and adjectives without exception ends in -мъ.

The dative plural endings of the substantives are:

HARD { Masculine, Neuter, Feminine } -амъ

SOFT { Masculine, Neuter, Feminine } -ямъ

Examples:

HARD NOUNS

- Masculine: магази́намъ, биле́тамъ, столя́мъ
- Neuter: мѣста́мъ, сёламъ, о́бществамъ
- Feminine: ба́бамъ, ко́мнатамъ, и́збамъ

Soft Nouns	Masculine	автомоби́лямъ
		слу́чаямъ
		соловья́мъ
	Neuter	поля́мъ
		ру́жьямъ
		имѣ́ніямъ
	Feminine	недѣ́лямъ
		статья́мъ
		а́рміямъ

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь have dative plural in -ямъ.

лошадя́мъ	lashadyám
дочеря́мъ	dacheryám
дѣ́тямъ	dyé'tyam
лю́дямъ	lyúdyam

But those ending in -жь, -чь, -шь, -щь have -амъ, e.g.:

вещ́амъ	v(y)eshchám

also

церкв́амъ	ts(y)erkvám

Neuter nouns in -я have dative plural in -ена́мъ, e.g.:

времена́мъ	vr(y)emenám

The dative plural of all the words of which the genitive plural has been specially given is perfectly normal, viz. -амъ or -ямъ, according to whether the noun is hard or soft; it can always be recognized by the ending -мъ.

The following may be specially mentioned:

сту́льямъ	сосѣ́дямъ	небеса́мъ
бра́тьямъ	дере́вьямъ	плеча́мъ
сыновья́мъ	ушáмъ	колѣ́нямъ
друзья́мъ	чудеса́мъ	

CHAPTER 45

THE DATIVE

Pronouns

DATIVE

мнѣ	mnyé	=*to me*
тебѣ́	tyebyé	=*to thee*
ему́ [1]	yemú	=*to him, to it*
ей [1]	yei	=*to her*
намъ	nam	=*to us*
вамъ	vam	=*to you*
имъ [1]	yim	=*to them*
себѣ́ [2]	s(y)ebyé	=*to oneself*

	SING.		PLUR.	
M. N.	моему́	mayemú	моймъ	mayím
F.	мое́й	mayéi		
M. N.	твоему́	tvayemú	твоймъ	tvayím
F.	твое́й	tvayéi		

[1] When governed by a preposition these words assume initial н, e.g. къ нему́, къ ней, къ нимъ.

[2] Cf. note on p. 96.

	Sing.		Plur.	
M. N.	на́шему	náshemu	на́шимъ	náshym̃
F.	на́шей	náshei		
M. N.	ва́шему	váshemu	ва́шимъ	váshym
F.	ва́шей	váshei		
M. N.	своему́	svayemú	свои́мъ	svayím
F.	свое́й	svayéi		
M. F.	кому́		kamú	
N.	чему́		chemú	
M. N.	чьему	chyemú	чьимъ	chyím
F.	чьей	chyéi		
M. N.	одному́	adnamú	одни́мъ	adnyím
F.	одно́й	adnói	одно́мъ	adnyé^{a}m
M. N.	самому́	samamú	сами́мъ	samím
F.	само́й	samói		
M. N.	э́тому	é^{a}tamu	э́тимъ	é^{i}tyim
F.	э́той	é^{a}toi [1]		
M. N.	тому́	tamú	тѣ́мъ	tyé^{a}m
F.	той	toi		
M. N.	всему́	fs(y)emú	всѣ́мъ	fsyé^{a}m
F.	всей	fsyéi		

[1] This -oi in rapid speech sounds like the letter ы.

CHAPTER 46

THE DATIVE

Adjectives

	Sing.		Plur.	
M. N.	краси́вому	krasívamu	краси́вымъ	krasívym
F.	краси́вой	krasívoi [1]		
M. N.	си́нему	sínyemu	си́нимъ	sínyim
F.	си́ней	sínyei		
M. N.	молодо́му	maladómu	молоды́мъ	maladým
F.	молодо́й	maladói		
M. N.	высо́кому	vysókamu	высо́кимъ	vysókim
F.	высо́кой	vysókoi [1]		
M. N.	дорого́му	daragómu	дороги́мъ	daragím
F.	дорого́й	daragói		
M. N.	хоро́шему	(k)haróshemu	хоро́шимъ	(k)haróshym
F.	хоро́шей	(k)haróshei		
M. N.	большо́му	bal'shómu	больши́мъ	bal'shým
F.	большо́й	bal'shói		

[1] This -oi in rapid speech sounds like the letter ы.

CHAPTER 47

PHRASES CONTAINING WORDS IN THE DATIVE

э́то мнѣ? = *is this for me?*
э́то тебѣ́ = *this is for thee*
э́то намъ? = *is this for us?*
э́то вамъ = *this is for you*
большо́е тебѣ́ спаси́бо = *many thanks to thee*
большо́е вамъ спаси́бо = *many thanks to you*
(contracted from спаси́ Богъ = *God save*)

благодаря́ э́тому
спаси́бо э́тому
} = *thanks to this*

сла́ва Бо́гу! = (*glory to God*) *thank goodness!*
(often = *very well indeed*)

вотъ тебѣ́
вотъ вамъ
} = *here you are, take this*

вотъ вамъ кни́га = *here is the book for you*
вотъ вамъ де́ньги = *here is the money for you*
вотъ вамъ перо́ = *here is a pen for you*
вотъ вамъ мѣ́сто = *here is a place for you*
вотъ вамъ письмо́ = *here is a letter for you*
вотъ вамъ откры́тка = *here is a postcard for you*

мнѣ хо́лодно = *I am cold*
ему́ тепло́ = *he is warm*
мнѣ совсѣ́мъ тепло́ = *I am quite warm*
мнѣ да́же сли́шкомъ жа́рко = *I am even too hot*
вамъ хо́лодно? = *are you cold?*
вамъ тепло́? = *are you warm?*

спаси́бо, мнѣ совсѣмъ хорошо́ = *thanks, I am quite all right*
мнѣ пло́хо = *I feel bad*
ему́ сего́дня ху́же = *he is worse to-day*

намъ здѣсь да́же лу́чше чѣмъ тамъ
we are even better (off) here than there

больно́му сего́дня гора́здо лу́чше
the patient (masc.) *is much better to-day*

больно́й сего́дня гора́здо ху́же
the patient (fem.) *is much worse to-day*

моему́ отцу́ вчера́ бы́ло лу́чше
my father was better yesterday

мнѣ за́втра бу́детъ лу́чше
I shall be better to-morrow

ему́ ужъ о́чень пло́хо
he is really very bad

ей ужъ совсѣмъ хорошо́
she is quite all right now

мнѣ здѣсь хорошо́ = *I am all right here*
мнѣ здѣсь лу́чше = *I am better here*
мнѣ здѣсь нехорошо́ = *I don't like it here*
(мнѣ) мо́жно ? = *may I ?*
(вамъ) нельзя́ = *you may not*
мо́жно мнѣ туда́ ? = *may I (go) there* (lit. *thither*) *?*
вамъ туда́ нельзя́ = *you may not (go) there*
а сюда́ мо́жно = *but you may here*
мнѣ э́то невозмо́жно = *that is impossible for me*
мнѣ э́то непрія́тно = *that is disagreeable to me*

вамъ э́то прія́тно ? = *is that agreeable to you ?*
уго́дно ли вамъ ? = *do you wish ?* (lit. *is it pleasing to you*)
что вамъ уго́дно ? = *what do you want ?*
какъ вамъ уго́дно = *as you like*
вамъ удо́бно такъ ? = *are you comfortable like that ?*
мнѣ совсѣмъ удо́бно = *I am quite comfortable*
мнѣ неудо́бно = *I am uncomfortable, it is awkward for me*
мнѣ нело́вко = *I don't like to*
э́то мнѣ дово́льно = *that is enough for me*
э́то мнѣ ма́ло = *that is not enough for me* (lit. *little*)
э́то мнѣ бу́детъ мно́го = *that will be (too) much for me*
мнѣ бо́льно = *it hurts me*
гдѣ вамъ бо́льно ? = *where does it hurt you ?*
э́то вамъ тяжело́ = *that is (too) heavy for you*
мнѣ э́то легко́ = *it is light* (or *easy*) *for me*
мнѣ э́то тру́дно = *it is difficult for me*
э́то бу́детъ мнѣ вы́годно = *that will be advantageous for me*
э́то бу́детъ вамъ поле́зно = *that will be good for you*
э́то бу́детъ вамъ вре́дно = *that will be bad for you* (sc. *for your health*)
вамъ бу́детъ пло́хо = *you will fare badly*
мнѣ ску́чно = *I feel depressed (bored)*
мнѣ гру́стно = *I feel sad*
мнѣ то́шно = *I feel sick*
мнѣ ду́рно = *I feel faint*

что вамъ на́до (*or* ну́жно) ?
what do you want ? (lit. *is necessary* with *acc.* or *gen.*)

мнѣ на́до черни́лъ, почто́вой бума́ги, перо́, каранда́шъ
I want some ink, some writing (lit. *postal*) *paper, a pen, and a pencil*

мнѣ ну́жно конве́ртъ (*or* обло́жку) и откры́тку и листъ почто́вой бума́ги
I want an envelope, a postcard, and a sheet of writing paper

мнѣ на́до ма́рокъ, пожа́луйста
I want some stamps, please

мнѣ на́до горя́чей воды́
I want some hot water

мнѣ на́до мы́ла и полоте́нце
I want some soap and a towel

мнѣ на́до хоро́шую, чи́стую и не сли́шкомъ дорогу́ю ко́мнату
I want a nice, clean, and not too expensive room

мнѣ на́до желѣ́зную крова́ть и чи́стую посте́лъ
I want an iron bedstead and clean bedding

мнѣ на́до поду́шку, чи́стую на́волочку, второ́е одѣ́яло, и чи́стыя простыни́
I want a pillow, a clean pillow-case, a second blanket (or *quilt*), *and clean sheets*

мнѣ на́до носи́льщика = *I want a porter*
мнѣ на́до извóщика = *I want a cab*
ско́лько вамъ ну́жно? = *how much do you want?* (or *how many*)

спаси́бо, мнѣ (бóльше) ничего́ не ну́жно
thank you, I don't want anything (*more*)

Obs. ну́жный is often treated as the predicate and must then agree with the noun, e.g.:

мнѣ ну́женъ э́тотъ журна́лъ = *I require this magazine*
мнѣ нужна́ э́та кни́га = *I require this book*

вамъ нужны э́ти де́ньги ? = *do you require this money ?*
пожа́луйста, да́йте мнѣ = *please, give me*
переда́йте мнѣ = *hand me, pass me*
скажи́те мнѣ = *tell me*
покажи́те мнѣ = *show me*
принеси́те мнѣ = *bring me*
позво́льте мнѣ = *permit me*
прости́те мнѣ = *forgive me*
помоги́те мнѣ = *help me*
да́йте мнѣ биле́тъ = *give me a ticket*
переда́йте мнѣ соль = *hand me the salt*

скажи́те мнѣ, гдѣ гости́ница
tell me where is the hotel

покажи́те мнѣ ко́мнату
show me a (or *the*) *room*

э́то мнѣ (не) нра́вится
this (*dis-*)*pleases me, I* (*don't*) *like this*

принеси́те мнѣ горя́чей воды́, кусо́къ мы́ла и чи́стое поло-
тёнце
bring me some hot water, a piece of soap, and a clean towel

Addressing Letters

Его́ Высокоблагоро́дію (abbreviated Е.В.Б.)
Ива́ну Никола́евичу Андре́еву
to his highlywellborn-ness (=*Esq.*)
Ivan Nikolayevich Andreyev

Ея Высокоблагоро́дію
А́ннѣ Ива́новнѣ Андре́евой
to her . . . Anna Ivanovna Andreyeva (=*Mrs.*)

Его́ Превосходи́тельству
Серге́ю Миха́йловичу Соломи́рскому
to his Excellency
Sergius Mikhailovich Solomirski

Его́ Сия́тельству Кня́зю
Па́влу Петро́вичу Долгору́кому
to his Serenity Prince
Paul Petrovich Dolgoruki

CHAPTER 48

VOCABULARY

Clothes

шу́ба *f.*	shúba	*fur coat*
мѣхъ (-á) *m.* (*pl.*)	myé^{a}kh	*fur(s)*
пальто́ *n.* (*indecl.*)	pal'tó	*overcoat*
фракъ *m.*	frak	*evening-dress coat*
сюртýкъ *m.*	syurtúk	*frock-coat*
жиле́тъ *m.*	zhylyé^{a}t	*waistcoat*
пиджа́къ *m.*	pidzhák	*short day-coat*
брю́ки *m. pl.*	bryúki	*breeches*
штаны́ *m. pl.*	shtanýy	*trousers*
пантало́ны *m. pl.*	pantalóny	*trousers*
руба́шка *f.*	rubáshka	*shirt*
фуфа́йка *f.*	fufáika	*undervest*
подшта́нники *m. pl.*	patshtányiki	*drawers*
(носо́къ) носки́ *m. pl.*	naskí	*socks*
(чуло́къ) чулки́ *m. pl.*	chulkí	*stockings*
(сапо́гъ) сапоги́ *m. pl.*	sapagí	*top-boots*
(башма́къ) башмаки́ *m. pl.*	bashmakí	*boots, shoes*
(ту́фля) ту́фли *f. pl.*	túflyi	*slippers, light shoes*
(кало́ша) кало́ши *f. pl.*	kalóshy	*galoshes*
хала́тъ *m.*	(k)halát	*dressing-gown*
костю́мъ *m.*	kastyúm	*suit, costume*

пла́тье *n.*	plátye	*suit, dress*
ю́бка *f.*	yúpka	*skirt*
куша́къ *m.*	kushák	*sash*
по́ясъ *m.*	póyas	*belt*
пря́жка *f.*	pryáshka	*buckle*
блу́за *f.*	blúza	*blouse*
ко́фточка *f.*	kóftachka	*lady's jacket*
(перча́тка) перча́тки *f. pl.*	perchátki	*gloves*
воротни́къ *m.*	varatnyík	*collar*
за́понка *f.*	zápanka	*stud, link*
пу́говица *f.*	púgovitsa	*button*
га́лстукъ *m.*	gálstuk	*tie*
подтя́жки *f. pl.*	patyáshki	*braces*
(рука́въ) рукава́ *m. pl.*	rukavá	*sleeves*
подкла́дка *f.*	patklátka	*lining*
ша́пка *f.*	shápka	*man's hat, cap*
мѣхова́я ш. *f.*	m(y)ekhaváya sh.	*fur cap*
шля́па *f.*	shlyápa	*lady's hat*
(носовой) плато́къ *m.*	platók	*(hand)kerchief*
непромока́емое *n.* (*adj.*)	nyepramakáyemoye [1]	*waterproof*
зо́нтикъ *m.*	zóntyik	*umbrella*
па́лка *f.*	pálka	*stick*
тро́сточка *f.*	tróstachka	*cane*
бѣльё *n.*	bilyó	*linen (garments)*
пла́тье *n.*	plátye	*clothes*
оде́жда *f.*	adyéᵃzhda	*clothes*
о́бувь *f.*	óbuf'	*footwear*
сти́рка *f.*	styírka	*the wash*
крахма́лъ *m.*	krakhmál	*starch*
но́жницы *f. pl.*	nózhnyitsy	*scissors*
була́вка *f.*	buláfka	*pin*
а́нглійская б. *f.*	ánglyiskaya b.	*safety pin*
шпи́лька *f.*	shpíl'ka	*hair-pin*
игóлка *f.*	igólka	*needle*
ни́тка *f.*	nyítka	*thread*
сукно́ *n.*	suknó	*cloth*
полотно́ *n.*	palatnó	*linen*

[1] Cf. note 1 on p. 70.

шерсть *f.*	sh'é^{i}rst'	*wool*
щётка *f.*	shchótka	*brush*
гребёнка *f.*	grebyónka	*comb*
бри́тва *f.*	brítva	*razor*
саквоя́жъ *m.*	sakvayásh	*hand-bag*
портфе́ль *m.*	partfé^{i}l'	*pocket-book*
кошелёкъ *m.*	kashelyók	*purse*
чемода́нъ *m.*	chemadán	*trunk*
(реме́нь) ремни́ *m. pl.*	remnyí	(*strap*) *holdall*
пледъ *m.*	plyé^{a}t	*rug*
шаль *f.*	sha^{i}l'	*shawl*
карма́нъ *m.*	karmán	*pocket*
арши́нъ *m.*	arshýn	*yard*
кольцо́ *n.*	kal'tsó	*ring*
очки́ *m. pl.*	achkí	*spectacles*

CHAPTER 49

AGE

ско́лько вамъ лѣтъ ? = *how old are you ?* (lit. *how many to you of years ?*)

мнѣ два́дцать лѣтъ = *I am twenty*

ему́ два́дцать оди́нъ годъ = *he is twenty-one*

ей три́дцать два го́да = *she is thirty-two*

ему́ со́рокъ три го́да = *he is forty-three*

ей пятьдеся́тъ четы́ре го́да = *she is fifty-four*

ему́ шестьдеся́тъ пять лѣтъ = *he is sixty-five*

ей лѣтъ се́мьдесятъ = *she is about seventy*

э́тому ребёнку то́лько шесть лѣтъ = *this child is only six*

э́той дѣвочкѣ почти́ семь лѣтъ = *this little girl is nearly seven*

ему́ бо́льше восьми́ (gen. of comparison) лѣтъ = *he is more than eight*

ему́ нѣтъ ещё восьми́ лѣтъ = *he is not yet eight*

ему́ уже́ во́семь лѣтъ = *he is already eight*

два го́да тому́ наза́дъ = *two years ago* (lit. *to that back*)
мно́го лѣтъ тому́ наза́дъ = *many years ago*
нѣсколько дней тому́ наза́дъ = *several days ago*

CHAPTER 50

PREPOSITIONS WHICH GOVERN THE DATIVE

къ = *to*

(before words beginning with two consonants difficult to pronounce : ко)

приходи́те къ намъ = *come and see us*
prikhadyítye k nam (lit. *come to us*)

приходи́те ко мнѣ = *come and see me*
ka mnyé

къ моему́ сожалѣнію ихъ не́-было до́ма
to my regret they were not at home

къ моему́ удивле́нію онъ былъ уже́ тамъ
to my astonishment he was already there

къ сча́стію, они́ всѣ здоро́вы
fortunately, they are all well (lit. *to good fortune*)

къ несча́стію, ихъ тутъ нѣтъ тепе́рь
unfortunately they are not here now

къ нача́лу ма́рта я бу́ду опя́ть до́ма
by the beginning of March I shall again be at home

къ но́вому го́ду я бу́ду опя́ть здѣсь
by the New Year I shall be here again

къ концу́ э́того мѣсяца
by (or *towards*) *the end of this month*

по = *according to, along, on, at (the rate of)*
(cf. p. 199)

по мнѣ
по мóему } = *in my (opinion), I consider*
по вáшему = *in your (opinion)*
по егó мнѣнію = *in his opinion*
по мóему нельзя́ = *I don't think it is possible*
по вáшему мóжно ? = *do you think it is possible ?*
какъ по вáшему ? = *what do you think about it ?* (lit. *how in your*)
по э́тому = *for this reason*
почему́ ? = *why ? for what reason ?*
потому́, что = *because* (lit. *for that what*)

по москóвскому врéмени
by Moscow time

двѣ мáрки по однóй копѣйкѣ
two stamps at one kopek each

дéсять мáрокъ по семи́ копѣекъ
ten stamps at seven kopeks each

э́ти я́блоки по пяти́ копѣекъ (штýка)
these apples are at five kopeks each (piece)

but for prices *at two, three, and four*, cf. pp. 170–71.

по желѣзной дорóгѣ = *by rail*
по Воскресéньямъ = *on Sundays*
по понедѣльникамъ = *on Mondays*
по втóрникамъ = *on Tuesdays*
по средáмъ = *on Wednesdays*
по четвергáмъ = *on Thursdays*
по пя́тницамъ = *on Fridays*
по суббóтамъ = *on Saturdays*

по зако́ну = *according to the law*
по у́лицѣ = *along the street*
по на́бережной = *along the quay*

CHAPTER 51

THE ACCUSATIVE

The accusative singular and plural of all masculine nouns, pronouns, and adjectives, and the accusative plural of all feminine nouns, pronouns and adjectives is the same as the nominative (singular and plural respectively) in the case of **inanimate**, and the same as the genitive (singular and plural respectively) in the case of **animate**, or **once animate** things. The accusative of all neuter words is always the same as the nominative, singular and plural, with one exception.

Feminine Substantives, singular

Feminine nouns have the following endings in the accusative singular:

	Hard	-у
	Soft	-ю
Hard Nouns	ба́бу	bábu
	ко́мнату	kómnatu
	избу́	izbú
Soft Nouns	недѣлю	nyedyé'lyu
	статью́	statyú
	а́рмію	ármiyu
	Россію	Rassíyu

The accusative singular of all feminine nouns in ь- is the same as the nominative singular, viz. :

NOM. AND ACC.	
ло́шадь	це́рковь
вещь	мать
	дочь

As regards the accusative plural ending these nouns follow the general rule given on p. 164.

Feminine Pronouns and Adjectives, singular

The accusative singular endings of feminine pronouns and adjectives are :

её	yeyó	*her*
мою́	mayú	*my*
твою́	tvayú	*thy*
на́шу	náshu	*our*
ва́шу	váshu	*your*
свою́	svayú	*own*
чью	chyú	*whose*
одну́	adnú	*one*
самоё	samayó	*herself*
э́ту	é[a]tu	*this* or *that*
ту	tu	*that yonder*
всю	fsyú	*all, the whole*
краси́вую	krasívuyu	*beautiful*
си́нюю	sínyuyu	*dark blue*
молоду́ю	maladúyu	*young*
высо́кую	vysókuyu	*tall*
дорогу́ю	daragúyu	*dear*
хоро́шую	(k)haróshuyu	*nice*
большу́ю	bal'shúyu	*big*

The only exceptions to the above rules are that the accusative of

кто is always кого́
онó is always егó

i.e. is always the same as the genitive, while the accusative of

что is always что

CHAPTER 52

PHRASES IN WHICH THE ACCUSATIVE IS USED

благодарю́ васъ = *I thank you*
благодарю́ васъ о́чень = *thank you very much*
мнѣ её жаль = *I am sorry for her* (lit. *to me is pity*)
мнѣ егó жаль = *I am sorry for him*

мнѣ бы́ло о́чень жаль ихъ
I was very sorry for them

да́йте мнѣ э́ту кни́гу = *give me this book*

да́йте ему́ э́ти де́ньги = *give him this money*

покажи́те мнѣ вашъ па́спортъ
show me your passport

покажи́те мнѣ ва́ши биле́ты
show me your tickets

принеси́те мнѣ мои́ ве́щи
bring me my things

сей-ча́съ = *immediately*
сію́ мину́ту = *this minute*

The accusative is used to express time:

ка́ждый разъ = *every time*
ка́ждый день = *every day*
ка́ждый ве́черъ = *every evening*
ка́ждый годъ = *every year*
ка́ждое у́тро = *every morning*
ка́ждую недѣ́лю = *every week*
ка́ждую ночь = *every night*

э́ту недѣ́лю = *this week*
э́ту весну́ = *this spring*
э́то лѣ́то = *this summer*
э́ту о́сень = *this autumn*
э́ту зи́му = *this winter*

but for *this morning, in the winter*, &c., cf. pp. 180–1.

With the names of the days of the week (cf. pp. 84–85, 168) and with those of the seasons ка́ждый is also used in the accusative.[1]

CHAPTER 53

PREPOSITIONS WHICH GOVERN THE ACCUSATIVE

въ = *into, to*

(before words beginning with two consonants difficult to pronounce: во)

въ Россі́ю = *to Russia*
въ А́нглію = *to England*
въ Герма́нію = *to Germany*

[1] Other words similarly so used are
про́шлый = *last* (sc. *the previous*)
будущій = *the next*
слѣ́дующій = *the following*

во Фра́нцію = *to France*
въ Сиби́рь = *to Siberia*
въ Крымъ = *to the Crimea*
въ Ита́лію = *to Italy*
въ Москву́ = *to Moscow*
въ Оде́ссу = *to Odessa*
въ шко́лу = *to school*
въ теа́тръ = *to the theatre*
въ садъ = *into the garden*
въ домъ = *into the house* [1]
въ го́родъ = *into the town*
въ рестора́нъ = *to the restaurant*
въ гости́ницу = *to the hotel*
биле́тъ въ Ки́евъ = *a ticket to Kiev*
биле́тъ въ Москву́ = *a ticket to Moscow*

въ Воскресе́нье бу́детъ представле́ніе
on Sunday there will be a performance

въ понеде́льникъ бу́детъ конце́ртъ
on Monday there will be a concert

во вто́рникъ не бу́детъ представле́нія
on Tuesday there will be no performance

въ сре́ду не бу́детъ конце́рта
on Wednesday there will be no concert

въ четве́ргъ есть парохо́дъ
on Thursday there is a steamer

въ пя́тницу нѣтъ парохо́да
on Friday there is no steamer

въ суббо́ту бу́детъ парохо́дъ
on Saturday there will be a steamer

[1] But домо́й = *home, to one's home, homewards.*

по́ѣздъ въ два́ часа́
the train is at 2 *o'clock*

по́ѣздъ въ пять часо́въ
the train is at 5 *o'clock*

по́ѣздъ въ полови́ну пе́рваго
the train is at 12.30

за́втракъ въ часъ
lunch is at one o'clock

обѣ́дъ въ семь часо́въ
dinner is at 7

въ полови́ну оди́ннадцатаго я бу́ду здѣсь
at 10.30 *I shall be here*

нача́ло представле́нія въ полови́ну восьмо́го
the beginning of the performance is at 7.30

у́жинъ бу́детъ въ де́вять часовъ
supper will be at 9 *o'clock*

я здѣсь въ пе́рвый разъ
I am here for the first time

э́то бу́детъ въ другой разъ
that will be for another time

въ э́то вре́мя я былъ бо́ленъ
at that time I was ill

гдѣ вы бы́ли въ э́то вре́мя ?
where were you at that time ?

онъ всегда́ во́-время
he is always in (*good*) *time*

во вре́мя уро́ка
during the (*time of the*) *lesson*

на = *on to*

положи́те кни́гу на столъ
lay the book on (to) the table

поста́вьте стака́нъ на подно́съ
put the tumbler on (to) the tray

положи́те чемода́нъ на́-полъ
put the trunk on (to) the floor

э́то бу́детъ на мой счётъ
that will be on my account

я о́чень радъ на счётъ э́того
I am very glad about this (on account of this)

мнѣ о́чень жаль на счётъ э́того дѣла
I am very sorry about this business

на Кавка́зъ = *to the Caucasus*
на вокза́лъ ! = *to the station !* (sc. *terminus, big station*)
на ста́нцію ! = *to the station !* (sc. *small station*)
на при́стань ! = *to the landing-stage !*

за = *for*

благодарю́ васъ за ва́ше пи́сьмо́
thank you for your letter

благодарю́ васъ за э́то
thank you for this

вотъ счётъ за ва́шу ко́мнату
here is the bill for your room

вотъ де́ньги за биле́ты
here is the money for the tickets

по = *at* (cf. pp. 163, 199)

пять ма́рокъ (nom. sing. ма́рка) по́-двѣ копѣйки
five stamps at 2 kopeks each

четы́ре ма́рки по́-три копѣ́йки
four stamps at 3 *kopeks each*

три ма́рки по четы́ре копѣ́йки
three stamps at 4 *kopeks each*

пять откры́токъ по четы́ре копѣ́йки
five postcards at 4 *kopeks each*

двѣ́ откры́тки по́-три копѣ́йки
two postcards at 3 *kopeks each*

че́резъ (or чрезъ, or че́резо) = *through, via, across*
че́резъ Москву́ = *through*, or *via Moscow*
че́резъ по́ле = *across the field*
че́резъ мо́ре = *across the sea*
че́резъ весь го́родъ = *through the whole town*
че́резъ кого́ ? = *by whose agency ? through whom ?*

CHAPTER 54

THE INSTRUMENTAL

Substantives

The instrumental singular endings are :

Hard	Masculine, Neuter	-омъ
	Feminine	-ой (or -ою)
Soft	Masculine, Neuter	-емъ
	Feminine	-ей (or -ею)

Examples:

HARD NOUNS	Masc.	магази́номъ	magazínam
		биле́томъ	bilyé[a]tam
		столо́мъ	stalóm
	Neut.	мѣ́стомъ	myé[a]stam
		село́мъ	s(y)elóm
		о́бществомъ	ópshchestvam
	Fem.	ба́бой *or* ба́бою	báboi [1], -oyu
		ко́мнатой *or* ко́мнатою	kómnatoi [1], -oyu
		избо́й *or* избо́ю	izbói, -óyu
SOFT NOUNS	Masc.	автомоби́лемъ	aftamabílyem
		слу́чаемъ	slúchayem
		соловьёмъ	salavyóm
		Васи́ліемъ	vasíliyem
	Neut.	по́лемъ	pólyem
		ружьёмъ	ruzhyóm
		имѣ́ніемъ	imyé[i]niyem
	Fem.	недѣ́лей *or* недѣ́лею	nyedyé[i]lyei, -yeyu
		статьёй *or* статьёю	statyói, -yóyu
		а́рміей *or* а́рміею	ármiyei, -yeyu
		Россіей *or* Россіею	Rassíyei, -yeyu

Masculine nouns ending in -цъ (also neuter nouns in -цо, -це, -ще) have instrumental singular in -омъ

[1] The fem. inst. ending -ой when unaccented sounds almost like -ы.

when the ending is accented and in -емъ when it is not, e.g.:

	NOM. SING.	INST. SING.	
Masc.	коне́цъ	концо́мъ	kantsóm
	оте́цъ	отцо́мъ	atsóm
	мѣ́сяцъ	мѣ́сяцемъ	myé^{i}syatsem
	нѣ́мецъ	нѣ́мцемъ	nyé^{i}mtsem
Neut.	лицо́ (*face, person*)	лицо́мъ	litsóm
	полоте́нце (*towel*)	полоте́нцемъ	palatyé^{i}ntsem

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ца have instrumental singular in -ей, e.g.:

NOM. SING.	INST. SING.	
у́лица (*street*)	у́лицей	úlyitsei
	(*or* у́лицею	úlyitseyu)

Masculine nouns with nominative singular in -жъ, -чъ, -шъ, -щъ, and feminine nouns with nominative singular in -жа, -ча, -ша, -ща have instrumental singular in -о́мъ, -о́й when the ending is accented, and in -емъ, -ей when it is not (nevertheless the masculine accented ending is still often written -емъ, of course pronounced -омъ, because ё after ж, ч, ш, щ becomes о), e.g.:

NOM. SING.		INST. SING.
ключъ	ключо́мъ ключёмъ	klyuchóm
ножъ	ножо́мъ ножёмъ	nazhóm
свѣча́	свѣчо́й свѣчо́ю	sv(y)echói sv(y)echóyu

NOM. SING.		INST. SING.	
экипа́жъ		экипа́жемъ	ekipázhem
Ива́новичъ *or* Ива́нычъ	Iványch [1] =*son of Ivan*	Ива́новичемъ *or* Ива́нычемъ	Iványchem
кало́ша		кало́шей	kalóshei
		кало́шею	kalósheyu

Masculine surnames in -овъ, -евъ and -инъ have the instrumental singular in -ымъ, like adjectives: Тургéневымъ, Лéрмонтовымъ, Пýшкинымъ; feminine surnames in -ова, -ева, -ина have -ой.

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь have instrumental singular in -ью (sometimes spelt -iю), e.g.:

ло́шадью	lóshadyu	це́рковью	ts(y)é^{i}rkavyu
ве́щью	vyé^{i}shchyu	ма́терью	mátyeryu
		до́черью	dócheryu

The masculine noun путь =*way, means*, which is otherwise declined exactly like ло́шадь, has instrumental singular:

путёмъ (=*by means of*) putyóm

Neuter nouns in -я have instrumental singular in -енемъ, e.g.:

вре́менемъ	vr(y)é^{i}menyem
и́менемъ (=*by name*)	ímenyem

The instrumental plural of all nouns, pronouns, and adjectives without exception ends in -ми.

[1] Patronymics are in talking always ruthlessly thus abbreviated.

The instrumental plural endings are :

Hard	Masculine, Neuter, Feminine	-ами
Soft	Masculine, Neuter, Feminine	-ями

Examples:

Hard Nouns	Masculine	магази́нами, биле́тами, столо́ми
	Neuter	мѣста́ми, сёлами, о́бществами
	Feminine	ба́бами, ко́мнатами, и́збами

Soft Nouns	Masculine	автомоби́лями, слу́чаями, соловья́ми
	Neuter	поля́ми, ру́жьями, имѣніями
	Feminine	недѣлями, статья́ми, а́рміями

The instrumental plural of all the words of which the genitive plural has been specially given is perfectly normal, viz. -ами or -ями, according to whether the noun is hard or soft ; it can always be recognized by the ending -ми.

The following may be specially mentioned :

сту́льями	дере́вьями
бра́тьями	уша́ми
сыновья́ми	чудеса́ми
друзья́ми	плеча́ми
сосе́дями	коле́нями

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь have instrumental plural in -я́ми, though some can also have -ьми́, e.g. :

лошадьми́	lashad'mí
or лошадя́ми	lashadyámi
дочерьми́	dacher'mí
or дочеря́ми	dacheryámi

люди, де́ти } have only { людьми́ lyud'mí ; де́тьми́ dyet'mí

Those ending in -жь, -чь, -шь, -щь have -ами, e.g. :

вещами́	v(y)eshchámi

also

церква́ми	ts(y)erkvámi

Neuter nouns in -я have instrumental plural in -ена́ми, e.g. :

времена́ми	vr(y)emenámi

CHAPTER 55

THE INSTRUMENTAL

Pronouns

	мной (*or* мно́ю)	mnoi (mnóyu)
	тобо́й (*or* тобо́ю)	tabói (tabóyu)
M. N.	имъ [1]	yim
F.	ей (*or* е́ю) [1]	yei (yéyu)
	на́ми	námi
	ва́ми	vámi
	и́ми [1]	yími
	собо́й (*or* собо́ю)	sabói (sabóyu)

	SINGULAR		PLURAL	
M. N.	моимъ	mayím	моими	mayími
F.	моей (*or* моею)	mayéi		
M. N.	твоимъ	tvayím	твои́ми	tvayími
F.	твоей (*or* твое́ю)	tvayéi		
M. N.	на́шимъ	náshym	на́шими	náshymi
F.	на́шей (*or* на́шею)	náshei		
M. N.	ва́шимъ	váshym	ва́шими	vashými
F.	ва́шей (*or* ва́шею)	váshei		
M. N.	свои́мъ	svayím	свои́ми	svayími
F.	свое́й (*or* свое́ю)	svayéi		

M. F. кѣмъ kyé[a]m
N. чѣмъ ch(y)é[a]m

[1] When governed by a preposition these words assume initial н, e.g. съ нимъ, съ ней, съ ни́ми.

	SINGULAR		PLURAL	
M. N.	чьимъ	chyím	чьи́ми	chyímі
F.	чьей (*or* чье́ю)	chyéi		
M. N.	э́тимъ	é^{i}tyim	э́тими	é^{i}tyimi
F.	э́той [1] (*or* э́тою)	é^{a}toi [1]		
M. N.	сами́мъ	samím	сами́ми	samímі
F.	само́й (*or* само́ю)	samói		
M. N.	одни́мъ	adnyím	одни́ми	adnyímі
F.	одно́й (*or* одно́ю)	adnói	одн$\acute{ъ}$ми	adnyé^{i}mi
M. N.	т$\acute{ъ}$мъ	tyé^{a}m	т$\acute{ъ}$ми	tyé^{i}mi
F.	той (*or* то́ю)	toi		
M. N.	вс$\acute{ъ}$мъ	fsyé^{a}m	вс$\acute{ъ}$ми	fsyé^{i}mi
F.	всей (*or* все́ю)	fsyéi		

CHAPTER 56

THE INSTRUMENTAL

Adjectives

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
M. N.	краси́вымъ	краси́выми
F.	краси́вой [1] (*or* -ою)	
M. N.	си́нимъ	си́ними
F.	си́ней (*or* -ею)	
M. N.	молоды́мъ	молоды́ми
F.	молодо́й (*or* -о́ю)	
M. N.	высо́кимъ	высо́кими
F.	высо́кой [1] (*or* -ою)	

[1] This -ой in rapid speech sounds like -ы.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
M. N.	дорогúмъ	дорогúми
F.	дорогóй (*or* -óю)	
M. N.	хорóшимъ	хорóшими
F.	хорóшей (*or* -ею)	
M. N.	большúмъ	большúми
F.	большóй (*or* -óю)	

CHAPTER 57

USES OF THE INSTRUMENTAL

The instrumental is used as a rule to indicate the agent by whom or the instrument by which anything is done :

кѣмъ э́та кни́га напи́сана ? (past participle passive)
by whom was this book written ?

кѣмъ э́то бы́ло ска́зано ?
by whom was this said ?

чѣмъ онъ былъ уби́ть ?
by what was he killed ?

чѣмъ э́то бы́ло сдѣ́лано ?
by what was this done ?

онъ былъ уби́ть свое́й жено́й
he was killed by his own wife

э́то бы́ло сдѣ́лано ножёмъ
that was done by a knife

чѣмъ бога́ты, тѣмъ и ра́ды
what we are rich in, that we will gladly give (proverb)

A very common and, to the foreigner, puzzling use of this case is that known as the 'predicative'; when a condition or position, usually of a temporary, accidental, or hypothetical kind, is indicated in the past or the future, the predicate, if a substantive, is very frequently put in the instrumental, e.g.:

когда́ я былъ ма́льчикомъ = *when I was a boy*

будь мое́й жено́ю ! = *be my wife !*

я никогда́ не бу́ду его́ жено́ю
I will never be his wife

причи́ною его́ болѣзни была́ просту́да
the cause of his illness was a chill

онъ верхо́мъ = *he is on horseback* (lit. *he is the upper part*, nom. верхъ)

The instrumental is used to indicate times and seasons as follows:

мы бы́ли тамъ весно́й
we were there in the spring

лѣ́томъ мы бу́демъ у себя́ до́ма
in the summer we shall be at our own home

о́сенью она́ была́ о́чень больна́
in the autumn she was very ill

зимо́й они́ всегда́ за грани́цей
in winter they are always abroad

but N.B. э́ту весну́, э́то лѣ́то, э́ту о́сень and э́ту зи́му in the accusative.

вчера́ ве́черомъ она́ была́ у насъ
yesterday evening she came to see us

сего́дня у́тромъ я былъ у него́
this morning I went to see him

сего́дня днёмъ не бу́детъ представле́нія
this afternoon (lit. *by day*) *there will be no performance*

за́втра ве́черомъ бу́детъ представле́ніе ?
will there be a performance to-morrow evening ?

сего́дня ве́черомъ о́чень хоро́шій конце́ртъ
this evening there is a very good concert

CHAPTER 58

PREPOSITIONS WHICH GOVERN THE INSTRUMENTAL

за = *behind*

они́ уже́ за столо́мъ
they are already at table

за до́момъ есть садъ
behind the house there is a garden

зачѣ́мъ вы здѣсь ?
why are you here ? (lit. *behind what, after what, for what*)

она́ за́-мужемъ
she is married (lit. *is behind a husband*)

она́ давно́ уже́ за́-мужемъ
she has been married a long while already

за кѣ́мъ она́ за́-мужемъ ?
to whom is she married ?

за нимъ = *to him* (н inserted after preposition, cf. p. 177)

она́ за́-мужемъ за англича́ниномъ
she is married to an Englishman

её ста́ршая сестра́ за́-мужемъ за францу́зомъ
her elder sister is married to a Frenchman

её мла́дшая сестра́ за́-мужемъ за ру́сскимъ
her younger sister is married to a Russian

её дочь за́-мужемъ за америка́нцемъ
her daughter is married to an American

они́ тепе́рь за грани́цей
they are now abroad (lit. *beyond the frontier*)

онъ давно́ уже́ за грани́цей
he has been (lit. *is*) *abroad already long since*

мы здѣсь какъ у Христа́ за па́зухой
we are in clover here (lit. *as in Christ's breast-pocket*—a proverb)

подъ = *under*
надъ = *above*

(before most words beginning with two consonants written по́до, на́до)

надо-мно́й не́бо, подо-мно́й земля́
above me is the sky, under me the earth

соба́ка подъ столо́мъ
the dog is under the table

подъ столо́мъ соба́ка
there is a dog under the table

пе́редъ = *in front of, before*

(before most words beginning with two consonants written пе́редо)

за мной лѣсъ, пе́редо мной мо́ре
behind me is the forest, in front of me the sea

пе́редъ до́момъ у́лица, а за у́лицей рѣка́
before the house is the street, and beyond the street the river

пе́редъ село́мъ руче́й, а за ручьёмъ по́ле
in front of the village is a stream, and behind the stream a field

пе́редъ э́тимъ она́ была́ за грани́цей
before this she was abroad

я былъ бо́ленъ пе́редъ тѣмъ
I was ill before that

ме́жду = *between*

ме́жду Англіей и Фра́нціей—мо́ре
between England and France is the sea

ме́жду Швейца́ріей и Ита́ліей—А́льпы
between Switzerland and Italy are the Alps

ме́жду Россіей и Сиби́рью—Ура́лъ
between Russia and Siberia are the Ural Mountains

Финля́ндія ме́жду Россіей и Шве́ціей
Finland is between Russia and Sweden

война́ ме́жду Россіей и Ту́рціей
the war between Russia and Turkey

съ = *with*

(before most words beginning with two consonants written со)

что съ ва́ми ?
what is (the matter) with you ?

ничего́ со мной нѣтъ
there is nothing the matter with me

со мной ду́рно
I feel bad

съ кѣмъ вы бы́ли тамъ ?
with whom were you there ?

съ мои́мъ дру́гомъ
with my friend

я не́-былъ ни съ кѣмъ
I was not with any one

чай съ са́харомъ и съ лимо́номъ
tea with sugar and lemon

ко́фе съ молоко́мъ и со сли́вками
coffee with milk and cream

хлѣбъ съ ма́сломъ
bread and butter

пирожки́ съ мя́сомъ
little pies with meat (in them)

у меня́ съ собо́й папиро́съ нѣтъ
I have no cigarettes on me (lit. *with myself*)

у тебя́ де́ньги съ собо́й есть ?
have you any money on you ?

CHAPTER 59

THE LOCATIVE

General use

The locative case is only used after the five prepositions:

въ (*or* во)	= *in*
на	= *on*
о (*or* объ *or* обо)	= *about, concerning*
при	= *in the presence of*; *in the time of*; *in addition to*; *in spite of*
по	= *after*

It can never be used except when preceded by one of these prepositions (some of which, it must be remembered, take other cases as well); hence it is fairly easily to be recognized; hence, too, it is sometimes called the prepositional case.

Substantives

The locative singular endings are:

Masculine, Feminine, Neuter } -ѣ

for both hard and soft nouns; but

masculine nouns ending in -ій (-i)
feminine nouns ending in -ія (-iya)
and neuter nouns ending in -ie (-iye)
all have locative singular in -іи (-iyi)

Examples:

Hard Nouns	Masculine	въ магази́нѣ	vmagazínye
		на биле́тѣ	nabilyé^{i}tye
		на столѣ́	nastalyé
	Neuter	на мѣ́стѣ	namyé^{i}stye
		въ селѣ́	fs(y)elyé
		въ о́бществѣ	vópshchestv(y)e
	Feminine	о ба́бѣ	abábye
		въ ко́мнатѣ	fkómnatye
		въ избѣ́	vizbyé
Soft Nouns	Masculine	въ автомоби́лѣ	vaftamabílye
		о слу́чаѣ	aslúchaye
		о соловьѣ́	asalavyé
		о Васи́ліи	avasílyi
	Neuter	на по́лѣ	napólye
		въ ружьѣ́	vruzhyé
		въ имѣ́ніи	vimyé^{i}nyiyi
		въ Россі́и	vrassíyi
	Feminine	о недѣ́лѣ	anyedyé^{i}lye
		въ статьѣ́	fstatyé
		въ а́рміи	vármiyi

Masculine nouns which contain e or o in the last syllable of the nominative singular and lose it throughout the rest of the declension:

	NOM. SING.	LOC. SING.
Hard Nouns	коне́цъ	на концѣ́
	посо́лъ	о послѣ́
Soft Nouns	день	о днѣ́
	ого́нь	въ огнѣ́

A large number of masculine nouns have a locative singular in -y (if hard) and in -ю (if soft) when used with the prepositions

въ = *in*
на = *on*

This form of the locative singular always has the accent on the end.

These nouns are mostly of one syllable (at most two) in the nom. sing., e.g. :

NOM. SING.			LOC. SING.	
бе́регъ	b(y)é^{i}rek	*shore*	на берегу́	naberegú
бокъ	bok	*side*	на боку́	nabakú
верхъ	vyé^{i}rkh	*top*	на верху́	nav(y)erkhú
возъ	vos	*cart*	на возу́	navazú
годъ	got	*year*	въ году́	vgadú
край	krai	*edge*	на краю́	nakrayú
Крымъ	krym	*Crimea*	въ Крыму́	fkrymú
лугъ	luk	*meadow*	на лугу́	nalugú
лѣсъ	lyé^{a}s	*forest*	въ лѣсу́	vlyesú
мостъ	most	*bridge*	на мосту́	namastú
полъ	pol	*floor*	на полу́	napalú
рядъ	ryát	*row*	на ряду́	naryadú
садъ	sat	*garden*	въ саду́	fsadú
снѣгъ	snyé^{a}k	*snow*	въ снѣгу́	fsnyegú
у́голъ	úgal	*corner*	въ углу́	vuglú
часъ	chas	*hour*	въ часу́	fchasú
шкапъ	shkap	*cupboard*	въ шкапу́	fshkapú

and many others.

Notice especially

лёдъ	lyót	*ice*	на льду́	nal'dú
ротъ	rot	*mouth*	во рту́	vartú

But :

кни́га о Кры́мѣ
a book about the Crimea

Feminine surnames in -ова, -ева, -ина have loc. sing. in -ой, like the adjectives:

о Па́вловой, Арсе́ньевой, Карса́виной

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь have locative singular in -и.

NOM. SING.	LOC. SING.	
ло́шадь	на ло́шади [1]	nalóshadyi
вещь	въ ве́щи	vv(y)é'shchi
це́рковь	въ це́ркви	fts(y)é'rkvi
мать	при ма́тери	primátyeri
дочь	при до́чери	pridócheri

Neuter nouns ending in -я have locative singular in -ени.

NOM. SING.	LOC. SING.	
вре́мя	о вре́мени	avr(y)é'menyi

The locative plural of all nouns, pronouns, and adjectives (except that of two pronouns) ends in -хъ.

The locative plural endings are:

HARD { Masculine, Neuter, Feminine } -ахъ

SOFT { Masculine, Neuter, Feminine } -яхъ

[1] = *on the horse*, not *on horseback*, cf. p. 180.

Examples:

Hard Nouns	Masculine	въ магази́нахъ
		на биле́тахъ
		на столя́хъ
	Neuter	въ мѣста́хъ
		въ сёлахъ
		въ о́бществахъ
	Feminine	о ба́бахъ
		въ ко́мнатахъ
		въ и́збахъ
Soft Nouns	Masculine	въ автомоби́ляхъ
		въ слу́чаяхъ
		о соловьяхъ
	Neuter	на поля́хъ
		въ ру́жьяхъ
		въ имѣніяхъ
	Feminine	о недѣляхъ
		въ статья́хъ
		въ а́рміяхъ

Feminine nouns with nominative singular in -ь have locative plural in -яхъ:

NOM. SING.	NOM. PLUR.	LOC. PLUR.
ло́шадь	ло́шади	на лошадя́хъ [1]
дочь	до́чери	о дочеря́хъ
[дитя́]	дѣти	при дѣтяхъ
[человѣкъ]	лю́ди	при лю́дяхъ

[1] This phrase means: *by carriage, driving.*

But those ending in -жь, -чь, -шь, -щь have -ахъ, e.g.:

NOM. SING.	NOM. PLUR.	LOC. PLUR.
вещь	ве́щи	въ вещáхъ
also це́рковь	це́ркви	въ церквáхъ

Neuter nouns in -я have loc. plur. in -енáхъ, e.g.:

NOM. SING.	NOM. PLUR.	LOC. PLUR.
вре́мя	времена́	о временáхъ

CHAPTER 60

THE LOCATIVE

Pronouns

обо мнѣ	abamnyé	= *about me*
о тебѣ	atyebyé	= *about thee*
о нёмъ [1]	anyóm	= *about him*, or *it*
о ней [1]	anyéi	= *about her*
о насъ	anás	= *about us*
о васъ	avás	= *about you*
о нихъ [1]	anyíkh	= *about them*
о себѣ	as(y)ebyé	= *about oneself*

	SINGULAR		PLURAL	
Masc. Neut.	о моёмъ	amayóm	о мои́хъ	amayíkh
Fem.	о мое́й	amayéi	*about my*	
Masc. Neut.	о твоёмъ	atvayóm	о твои́хъ	atvayíkh
Fem.	о твое́й	atvayéi	*about thy*	

[1] These three forms of the pronoun never occur without the initial н, being always preceded by a preposition.

	SINGULAR		PLURAL	
Masc. Neut.	о на́шемъ	anáshem	о на́шихъ	anáshykh
Fem.	о на́шей	anáshei	*about our*	
Masc. Neut.	о ва́шемъ	aváshem	о ва́шихъ	aváshykh
Fem.	о ва́шей	aváshei	*about your*	
Masc. Neut.	о своёмъ	asvayóm	о свои́хъ	asvayíkh
Fem.	о своёй	asvayéi	*about one's own*	

Masc. Fem.	о комъ	akóm = *about whom*
Neut.	о чёмъ	ach(y)óm = *about what*

	SINGULAR		PLURAL	
Masc. Neut.	въ чьёмъ	fchyóm	въ чьи́хъ	fchyíkh
Fem.	въ чьей	fchyéi	*in whose*	
Masc. Neut.	въ одно́мъ	vadnóm	въ одни́хъ	vadnyíkh
Fem.	въ одно́й	vadnói	въ одне́хъ	vadnyé^{a}kh
			in one, in some	
Masc. Neut.	въ само́мъ	fsamóm	въ сами́хъ	fsamíkh
Fem.	въ само́й	fsamói	*in -self, -selves*	
Masc. Neut.	объ э́томъ	abé^{a}tam	объ э́тихъ	abé^{i}tyikh
Fem.	объ э́той [1]	abé^{a}toi [1]	*about this, that, these,* or *those*	

[1] This -ой in rapid speech sounds like -ы.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL
Masc. Neut.	въ томъ ftom	въ тѣхъ ftyé[a]kh
Fem.	въ той ftoi	*in that yonder, in the former*
Masc. Neut.	во всёмъ vafsyóm	во всѣхъ vafsyé[a]kh
Fem.	во всей vafsyéi	*in the whole, in all*

CHAPTER 61

THE LOCATIVE

Adjectives

HARD

	Singular	*Plural*
Masc. Neut.	о краси́вомъ	о краси́выхъ
Fem.	о краси́вой[1]	

SOFT

Masc. Neut.	въ си́немъ	въ си́нихъ
Fem.	въ си́ней	

HARD (accent on termination)

Masc. Neut.	о молодо́мъ	о молоды́хъ
Fem.	о молодо́й	

[1] This -ой in rapid speech sounds like -ы.

Stem in к г х

	Singular	*Plural*
Masc. Neut.	на высо́комъ	на высо́кихъ
Fem.	на высо́кой [1]	

Same, with accent on termination

Masc. Neut.	о дорого́мъ	о дороги́хъ
Fem.	о дорого́й	

Stem in ж ч ш щ

Masc. Neut.	въ хоро́шемъ	въ хоро́шихъ
Fem.	въ хоро́шей	

Same, with accent on termination

Masc. Neut.	въ большо́мъ	въ большихъ
Fam.	въ большо́й	

CHAPTER 62

EXAMPLES OF THE USE OF THE LOCATIVE WITH THE PREPOSITIONS

въ (*or* во)

въ чёмъ дѣ́ло ? = *what is the matter ?* (lit. ***in what is the business***)

де́ньги бы́ли у меня́ [2] въ кошелькѣ́
the money was in my purse

[1] This -ой in rapid speech sounds like -ы.

[2] This is better than saying **въ моёмъ кошелькѣ́.**

а кошелёкъ былъ у меня́ въ карма́нѣ
and the purse was in my pocket

а тепе́рь его́ тамъ нѣтъ
and now it isn't there

па́спортъ былъ у меня́ въ друго́мъ карма́нѣ
the passport was in my other pocket

и его́ то́же нѣтъ
and that isn't (there) either (lit. *also*)

биле́ты бы́ли у меня́ въ тре́тьемъ карма́нѣ
I had the tickets in a third pocket

и тепе́рь да́же ихъ тамъ нѣтъ
and now not even they are there

въ э́томъ по́ѣздѣ о́чень мно́го наро́ду
in this train there are a lot of people

въ теа́трѣ сего́дня о́чень ма́ло наро́ду
in the theatre there are very few people to-day

въ ва́шей кварти́рѣ всегда́ тепло́
in your flat it is always warm

моя́ невѣ́ста тепе́рь въ Ло́ндонѣ
my fiancée is now in London

мой жени́хъ тепе́рь въ Москвѣ
my fiancé is now in Moscow

въ э́томъ го́родѣ нѣтъ хоро́шей гости́ницы
in this town there is no good hotel

въ э́томъ селѣ́ есть о́чень краси́вая це́рковь
in this village there is a very beautiful church

въ э́томъ рестора́нѣ всегда́ мно́го наро́ду
in this restaurant there are always a lot of people

моя́ сестра́ въ саду́ = *my sister is in the garden*

мой братъ въ лѣсу́ = *my brother is in the forest*

въ саду́ мно́го цвѣто́въ
in the garden there are many flowers

въ лѣсу́ мно́го грибо́въ
in the forest there are many mushrooms

въ э́томъ году́ мы бы́ли въ Крыму́
this year we have been in the Crimea

онъ весь въ пыли́ = *he is all covered with dust*

она́ вся въ грязи́ = *she is all covered with mud*

всѣ мои́ ве́щи въ шкапу́
all my things are in the cupboard

въ кото́ромъ часу́
at what o'clock?

часы́ тамъ въ углу́
the clock is there in the corner

что́-то въ э́томъ ро́дѣ
something in this style

э́тотъ садъ въ ро́дѣ на́шего
this garden is like ours (in the kind of)

въ нѣкоторомъ ро́дѣ
in a certain way, to some extent

въ нѣкоторыхъ мѣста́хъ есть лѣса́, а въ други́хъ поля́
in some places there are forests and in others fields

вы бы́ли когда́-нибудь въ Россіи?
have you ever been in Russia?

я въ Англіи въ пе́рвый разъ
I am in England for the first time

на = *on*

на э́томъ парохо́дѣ нѣтъ бо́льше мѣ́ста
there is no more room on this steamer

на э́той у́лицѣ о́чень хоро́шіе магази́ны
in this street there are very good shops

вотъ нашъ домъ на э́той у́лицѣ
here is our house in this street

на́ши дѣ́ти на берегу́ мо́ря
our children are at the seaside

вы бы́ли вчера́ на э́томъ концёртѣ
were you at that concert yesterday?

на э́томъ по́ѣздѣ есть вагóнъ-рестора́нъ
on this train there is a restaurant-car

на э́той ста́нціи есть хоро́шій буфе́тъ
at this station there is a good refreshment-room

ва́ша ко́мната на пе́рвомъ, второ́мъ, тре́тьемъ или четвёртомъ этажѣ́?
is your room on the first, second, third, or fourth floor?

на дворѣ́ = *out of doors* (lit. *on the yard*)

на дворѣ́ сего́дня си́льный моро́зъ
out of doors to-day there is a strong frost

они́ тепе́рь на Кавка́зѣ
they are now in the Caucasus

Петрогра́дъ на Невѣ́ = *Petrograd is on the Neva*

Москва́ на Москвѣ́-рѣкѣ́ = *Moscow is on the Moscow river*

Варша́ва на Ви́слѣ = *Warsaw is on the Vistula*

Ри́га на Двинѣ́ = *Riga is on the Dvina*

Ки́евъ на Днѣпрѣ́ = *Kiev is on the Dnieper*

Но́вгородъ на Во́лховѣ = *Novgorod is on the Volkhov*

Ни́жній-Но́вгородъ на Во́лгѣ = *Nizhni-Novgorod is on the Volga*

Росто́въ-на-Дону́ = *Rostov-on-the-Don*

на комъ онъ жена́тъ ?
to whom is he married ?

онъ жена́тъ на ру́сской
he is married to a Russian

онъ былъ жена́тъ на англича́нкѣ
he was married to an Englishwoman

соба́ка на полу́, а ко́шка на сту́лѣ
the dog is on the floor, and the cat is on the chair

на полу́ соба́ка, а на сту́лѣ ко́шка
on the floor there is a dog, and on the chair there is a cat

на мосту́ былъ автомоби́ль, а на автомоби́лѣ былъ чемода́нъ
on the bridge there was a motor-car and on the motor-car was a trunk

на э́томъ по́лѣ бы́ло высо́кое де́рево, а на де́ревѣ была́ больша́я пти́ца
in this field was a tall tree, and on the tree there was a big bird

на не́бѣ сего́дня мно́го облако́въ
in the sky to-day there are many clouds

у нихъ на стѣна́хъ мно́го карти́нъ
there are many pictures on their walls

газе́та на столѣ́, а журна́лъ на дива́нѣ
the newspaper is on the table, and the magazine is on the sofa

о = *about*

(объ before words beginning with a vowel, occasionally обо before some words beginning with two consonants)

скажи́те мнѣ объ э́томъ
tell me about this

о чёмъ э́та пье́са ?
what is this play about ?

есть статья́ въ Но́вомъ Вре́мени сегодня́ объ А́нгліи
there is an article in the Nóvoye Vrémya to-day about England

въ Ру́сскомъ Сло́вѣ вчера́ была́ о́чень хоро́шая статья́ о Львѣ Никола́евичѣ Толсто́мъ
in the Russkoye Slovo yesterday there was a very good article about Leo Nikolayevich Tolstoi

при = *in the presence of, in the time of*

при Петрѣ Вели́комъ = *in the time of Peter the Great*
при Екатери́нѣ Вели́кой = *in the time of Catherine the Great*
э́то бы́ло при мнѣ = *that was in my presence* (or, *in my time, I was there then*)
при томъ = *in addition to that*
при чёмъ = *in addition to which*
при всёмъ томъ = *in spite of all that*
при комъ ? = *in whose presence ?*
при всѣхъ = *in the presence of all*
э́то ни при чёмъ = *that has nothing to do with it*
онъ здѣсь ни при чёмъ = *this doesn't concern him*

по = *after*

потомъ = *then, thereupon*
по чёмъ ? = *at what price are ?* (cf. pp. 163, 170–1)
по чёмъ я́блоки ? = *how much are the apples each ?*
по моёмъ пріѣздѣ (nom. пріѣздъ) = *after my arrival*
по его́ отъѣздѣ (nom. отъѣздъ) = *after his departure*
по на́шемъ возвраще́нiи = *after our return*
по чёмъ вы зна́ете ? = *how do you know ?*
по полу́дни = *in the afternoon*

INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES

a great deal 11
about (approximately) 147
— (concerning) 185–93, 198
above 182
abroad 180, 182
according to 163
account 170
acquaintance 80
across 171
act 101
addition (in — to) 185, 198–9
address 40, 64
advantageous 156
affair 46
after 147, 198–9
afternoon 147, 181, 199
afterwards 147, 198
again 11, 16
ago 162
— (long), *v.* long since
all 57, 65
all right 7, 17, 155
alone 56, 69
along 163
alongside 147
already 9, 11 *and passim*
also 11, 15
always 10, 16
ambassador 35
amiable 75
amusing 75
and 10 *and passim*
and so forth 129
ancient 78
angry 22
animal 80, 131
annoyed 22
another 84
— time 169
any 83, 87
anyhow (= somehow or other) 13
any one 86
anything 86
any time 13
anywhere 12
apple 5, 37, 93, 108
apple-tree 133
are, *v.* is
arm 130
arm-chair 41
army 32
around 147
arrival 199
arshin 114–19, 161
article (newspaper) 32, 100
artist 101
as 12
as much 11
ass, *v.* donkey
astonishing 75
at (table) 181
at (what price) 163, 170, 198–9
at (the rate of) 163, 170, 198–9
at (-o'clock) 119–20, 169, 194
at (the house of) 142
at all (not) 11, 18
at home 15, 16
attractive 75
aunt 58
au revoir 12
author 101
automobile, *v.* motor-car
autumn 47, 180
autumn (*adj.*) 78
avenue 40
awful 76

bachelor 80
back (*adj.*) 74
back (*subst.*) 130
back(-wards) 162
back of head 129
bad 75
bad (I feel) 155
bad (it is) 17, 19
bad (for the health) 20
baker's 39
bank (building) 39
bank (shore) 45
barley 133
barrier 40
basin 41
bath 41
bathing-place 45
bath-room 40
baths 39
be (can it — that ?) 12
be (to) 27
beans 107
bear 132
beard 129
beast 131
beautiful 70, 75
because 163
bed 41
bed (in garden) 133
bedding 41, 44
bedroom 40
bedstead 41
be 132
beef 106
been 28
beer 9, 108
beetroot 107
before 144, 183
beginning 45
behind 181
belfry 39
bell (church-) 39
bell (house-, room-) 40
belt 160
bench 41
berry 108
besides 147
best 88
better 17, 19, 122, 155
between 183
big 71, 73, 81
bigger 73
biggest 87
bill 45
birch-tree 133
bird 132
biscuits 108
bit 109
bitter 77
black 77
blame (to be to) 23
blanket 41
blind 76
blinds 42
blood 130
blossom 133
blotting-paper 42
blouse 160
blue (dark) 70, 78
blue (light) 78
boat (rowing-) 45
body 8, 129
boiled egg 107
boiling water 108, 113
bone 130
book 42
boots 159
bored 156
boring 76
both . . . and . . . 10
bottle 43
boulevard 40
box 41
boy 6, 36, 61
braces 160
brandy 109
bread 106
breakfast, *v.* tea, coffee
breeches 159
brick 40
bridge 40
bright 78

bring me 158, 166
broad 74
brother 37, 58, 95
brown 77
brush 161
buckle 160
buckwheat 133
bug 133
building 38
business 46
but 10, 11, 15 *and passim*
butter 106
button 160
by (alongside) 147
by carriage 189
by means of 174
by name 174
by (whom, what) 179

cab 43
cabbage 107
cabin 45
café 39
calf 131
camel 131
can it be that ? 12
candle 36, 42
candle-stick 42
cane 160
cap 160
capital 46
car (motor-) 32
cards 101
carpet 41
carriage 36, 43
carriage (by) 189
carriage (railway-) 44
carrot 107
cart 187
case, *v.* incident
cat 131
cathedral 39
cauliflower 107
cause 180
caviar 106
ceiling 41
cellar 40
central 48
certain (a) 69, 82, 87
chair 37, 41, 95
change (coins) 44
chamber-pot 41
charcoal 42
charming 75
chauffeur 43
cheap 76
cheap (it is) 24, 26
cheek 129
cheese 106
chemist's 130
cherries 108
chess 101
chest of drawers 41
chicken 36, 107, 131
child 4, 33, 36, 58, 59
children 38, 58, 59, 96
chill 180
chimney 39
chin 129
chocolate 108
Christian 50
Christian name 54
church 33, 38
cigar 109
cigarette 109
class 44, 102
clean 76
clear 78
cloak-room 44
clock 42
cloth, *v.* towel
cloth (material) 160
cloth (table-) 41
clothes 160
cloud 48, 95
coach-house 40
coal 42
coarse 77
coat (fur) 159
cock 131
cockroach 133
coffee 108

cognac 109
cold (*subst.*) 130
cold (it is) 24, 25
cold (I am) 154
cold (*adj.*) 77
collar 160
collection 100
colour 37, 95
comb 161
come 162
comfortable 76
coming (*adj.*) 78
community 48
companion 59
company 32
company, *v.* visitor
compartment 44
complex 76
composition 100
concerning 185–93, 198
concert 101
concierge 43
confectioner's 39
consider (I) 163
consumption 130
content(ed) 22
continually 57
convenient 76
conversation 101
cool (it is) 24, 25
cool (*adj.*) 77
copper 45
cork 43
corkscrew 43
corner 41
corridor 44
costume 159
cough 130
Count 61
Countess 61
country 46
court-yard 39
cover (knife and fork) 43
cow 131
cream 106, 109
cucumber 107
cup 42
cupboard 41
currants 108
curtain 42
cushion 41
custom (habit) 46
custom-house 2, 38
cutlet 106

damp 77
dangerous (*adj.*) 76
dangerous (it is) 25, 27
dangerously 21
dark (it is) 24, 25
dark (colour) 77
dark (complexion) 78
darkness 48
dates 108
daughter 33, 58
dawn 47
day 8, 35, 46
day after to-morrow (the) 30
day before yesterday (the) 121, 143
day (to-) 10, 16, 30
deaf 76
deal (a great) 11
dear (*adj.*) 71, 75, 76
dear (my) 132
dear (expensive, it is) 24, 26
death 131
deck 45
deep 74
deer 132
degree 130
departure 199
depressed 156
desyatin 114–19
dictionary 101
difficult 76
dining-car 44
dining-room 40, 80
dinner 109
direct (*adj.*) 76
dirty 76
disagreeable 155

disgusting 76
dish 43, 80
dislike (I —) 158
displeased 22
displeases (it — me) 158
district 46
do (how do you —) 12
doctor 130
dog 131
done 179
donkey 131
door 40
door (front —) 6, 39
doors (out of) 196
doubtful (it is — whether) 12
dough 107
dove 132
drawer 41
drawers (pants) 159
drawing-room 40, 80
dress 160
dress-coat 159
dressing-gown 159
driving 189
drought 133
dry 77
duck 5, 107
Duchess (Grand) 61
Duke (Grand) 61
dumb 76
during 169
dust 47

each 82
eagle 132
ear 37, 95, 129
early (it is) 24, 25
early (*adj.*) 78
earth 48
easier 125
east(ern) 48
easy 7, 76
edge 187
edition 100
egg 95, 107
either . . . or . . . 10, 14
elbow 130
elder 78, 88
elderly 78
eldest 88
electric light 42
elephant 131
elk 132
Emperor (the) 61
Empress (the) 61
empty 74
end 35, 45
engaged (it is) 25
enormous 73
enough 11, 23
enough (not) 11
envelope 42
especial 76
essential 76
establishment 39
etc. 129
even (*adj.*) 74
even (*conj.*) 11
evening 47
evening (*adj.*) 78
evening clothes 159
ever (at any time) 195
every 82, 84, 167
everything 8
everywhere 10
excellency 159
excellent 75
except 147
excuse (me)! 12, 23
exists (there) 27
expensive, *v.* dear
expensive (*adj.*) 71, 76
exquisite 75
extra (*adj.*) 76
eye 35, 37, 93, 95, 129

face 129
factory 39
faint 156
fair-haired 78
faith 101
far (it is) 25, 26, 128

fare badly 156
fat 74
father 57, 58
fathom 45, 114–19
fence 39
festival 47
fever 130
few (a) 11
few (a — more) 113
few (how) 12
few (so) 12
few (some) 11
fiancé(e) 59
field 32, 45
figs 108
fillet 106
fine 75
finger 130
fir 133
fire (flame, light) 35, 42
firm 77
first 82
fish 106, 132
flat 39
flaxen 78
flea 132
floor (of room) 6, 8, 41, 187
floor (story) 39, 196
flower(s) 37, 95, 133
flower-bed 133
fly 132
foal 131
fog 48
following (the) 74
foot 130
foot (ft.) 45
footwear 160
for (*conj.*) 11
for (*prep.*) 144
for (you) 154
forehead 6, 8, 129
forest 45
forget-me-not 133
forgive me 12, 158
fork 43
former (the) 57
former, *v.* first
former (previous) 78
formerly 13
forth (and so) 129
fortunate, *v.* happy
fowl 107
fox 132
free (*adj.*) 76
free (it is) 25
fresh 77
friend 37, 59, 95
frock-coat 159
frog 132
from (away from) 145
from (out of) 145
front (*adj.*) 74
front (in — of) 183
front door 6, 39
frontier 43
frost 47
fruit 93, 108
fuel 42
full 74
fur(s) 159
furniture 41
future (*adj.*) 78

gallery 39
galosh(es) 36, 159
game (to eat) 107
game (to play) 101
garden 133
garret 40
gate 39
gay, *v.* merry
general (*adj.*) 76
gentleman 60
girl (little) 36, 61, 94
give me 158, 166
glad 21, 22
glass (wine-) 43
glass (tumbler) 42
glasses, *v.* spectacles
gloves 160
gnat 132
goat 131

God 7, 27
gold 45
good 71, 75
good (it is) 18, (for the health) 20
good-bye 12
good-night 104, -morning 12
good time (in) 169
goose 107
gooseberries 108
granddaughter 58
Grand Duchess 61
Grand Duke 61
grandfather 58
grandmother 58
grandson 58
grapes 108
grass 133
gravy 106
gray-haired 78
great 73
great deal (a) 11
green 78
green vegetable 107
grey 77
grouse 107
guard 44
guest(s), *v.* visitor
gulf 46
gum 129

habit (custom) 46
hair 93, 129
hair-pin 160
hairdresser's 39
half 119–20
half an hour 119
half a rouble 44, 109
hall 40
ham 107
hamlet 46
hand 130
hand me 158
hand-bag 161
handkerchief 160
handle 42
happiness 101
happy 22, 76
hard 77
hare 132
harvest 133
hat 160
have (to) 134
have been 28
hay 133
he 13, 14, 55
head 129
health 130
healthy 76
heart 130
heathen 50
heating 44
heaven 37, 48, 95
heavy 76
heel 130
Heir-Apparent (the) 61
help (me) 158
hen 131
her 105, 165
here 3, 10
here is 11, 15
herring 132
herself (56), 68, 96
high 71, 74
high-road 40
hill 45
himself (56), 68, 96
hip 130
his 105
holdall 161
holiday 47
home (at) 15, 16
homewards 168
honey 8, 108
hope 101
horrid 75
horrid (it is) 18
hors d'œuvre 106
horse 33, 131
horseback 180
hospital 38
host 60
hostess 60

hot (*adj.*) 77
hot (I am) 154
hot (it is) 24, 25
hotel 38, 128, 168
hound 131
hour 47, 114–19
hour (at what) 169
house 8, 35, 39, 168
house (at the — of) 142
how 12
how do you do 12
how few 12
how little, *v.* what a little
how many 11
how much 11, 198–9
how old 161
however 11
huge 73
hurry up ! 128
hurts (it) 156
husband 7, 59
hut (peasant's) 32

I 16, 55
ice 8,
ice-cream 80, 108
ill 21
illness 130
immediately 166
impossible (it is) 12, 155
in 185–95
in (addition to) 185, 198–9
in (the possession of) 134–44
in (the presence of) 185, 198–9
in (the time of) 185, 198–9
in front of 183
in good time 169
incident 46
inconvenient 76
indispensable 144
inflammation 130
ink 42
ink-stand 42
insect 80, 132
instead of 147
interesting 75
into 168
iron 45
is 3, 13, 27
island 45
it 13, 14, 55
itself (56), 68, 96

jacket 159, 160
jam 107
joint 106
judge 33
jug 41

key 5, 36, 44, 94
kid 131
killed 179
kind (*adj.*) 75
kind (*subst.*) 108
kind (of such a) 102
kind (what, every) 82, 87
kind (no, some) 83
king 61
kitchen 40
kitchen garden 133
kitten 131
knee 3, 37, 93, 130
knife 36, 43, 94
kopek 44, 114–19, 163, 170–1
kvas 109

lad 61
lady 60
lake 5, 45
lamb 131
lamp 42
lamp-shade 42
land, *v.* earth, country
landing-stage 45, 128
language 101, 125
lantern 42
large 71, 73
larger 73
largest 87
last (the) 74
last (*adj.*) 78
late (it is) 24, 25

late (*adj.*) 78
lately 10, 17
latter (the) 57
latter, *v.* last
laundry, *v.* wash
law 101
lay 170
left (*adj.*) 74
left (to the, on the) 10
leg 130
lemon 108
lesson 101
letter 46
library 40
lid 43
life 9, 131
light (it is) 24, 25
light (colour) 77
light (weight) 76
light (the) 48
light (artificial) 42
lighting 44
like (I —) 158
likewise 11
lilac (*subst.*) 133
lilac 78
linen 160
lining 160
link(s) 160
lion 104, 132
lip 129
literature 101
little 74, 81–2
little (a) 11
little (a — more) 113
little (but) 11
little (such a) 12
little (too), *v.* not enough
little (what a) 12
loaf 106
lobby 40
local 74
locality 67
long 74
long (a — way), *v.* far
long (not), *v.* lately
long ago, *v.* long since
long since 10, 17
longer (no) 11
look well, ill 136–7
lot (a) 11
lot (such a) 12
lot (what a) 12
love 101
low 74
lower 74
luck (with) 13
lucky, *v.* happy
luggage 44, 112
lumber-room 40
lunch 109
lungs 130

Madam 61
magazine 100
magnificent 75
maid 60, 80
maize 133
malicious 75
man 33, 61, 62
many (how) 11, 112
many 11, 112
many thanks 154
market 39
marvel 37, 95
marvellous 75
many (so), *v.* so much
married (woman) 181–2
married (man) 197
master 60
match 42
matter (what is the) 184, 193
mattress 41
mauve 78
may I ? 155
may (one) 12
mayn't (one) 12, 155
meadow 7, 45, 187
means 44
means (by — of) 174
meat 106
medicine 130

melon 108
merry 75
middle 45
middle (*adj.*) 74
milk 5, 109
mill (water-) 39
millet 133
minute 47, 114–20
mirror 41
miserable 75
Miss, Mr., Mrs., Messrs. 60
mistress 60
money 36, 44, 95
moneychanger's 44
monkey 132
month 46
moon 46, 48
more (ещё) 9, 11, 112
morning 47
morning (good), *v.* how do you do
morning (*adj.*) 78
mosquito 132
most (the) 87
mother 2, 33, 57, 58
motor-car 32, 43
mountain 45
moustache 129
mouth 8, 129
much 11
much (*followed by a comparative, e. g.* better, worse) 18
much (as) 11
much (how) 11
much (so) 11
much (too) 11
mud 47
museum 39
mushroom 107
music 101
must 23
must (one) 12
mustard 106
mustn't (one) 12
mutton 106
my 4, 55, 62
myself (56), 68, 96
nail 130
name (by —) 174
napkin 43
narrow 74
nasty 75
near (it is) 25, 26, 128
near (*prep.*) 142, 147
nearly 11
necessary (it is) 12, 111
neck 129
necktie 160
need (I) 157
needle 160
neighbour 37, 95
neither . . . nor . . . 10, 14
nest 3, 132
never 10
new 78
newest 87
newspaper 3, 100
newspaper article 32, 100
next (the) 74, 78
nice 71, 75
nice (it is) 17, 18
nice (to taste) 24, 26
night 46
nightingale 132
no 10, 13, 28
no longer 11, 110
no one 111
nor 10, 14
north(ern) 48
nose 8, 129
not 10, 13, 27 *and passim*
not at all 11
not enough 11
not in the least, *v.* not at all
not long, *v.* lately
not much, *v.* some
not nice (it is) 17
not nice (to taste) 24, 26
not quite 11, 21
not really ?, *v.* can it be that ?
not very 11
not yet 11
not (there is) 10, 27, 91

note (money) 44
note-book 42
nothing 111
novel 100
now 10, 11, 15, 16, 25 *and passim*
nowhere 10
number (on anything) 45
nursery 40, 80
nursing-home 130

oak 133
oats 133
occupied (it is) 25
o'clock (at —) 119–20, 169, 194
office 44
official 43
oil 106
old 78
oldest 87
old-fashioned 78
old (how) 161
old man 61
old woman 61
omelet 107
one 56, 69, 145
one's own 56, (105)
onion 107
only 11, 56
on 163, 168, 185–93, 196–7
on to 170
once 83
open (it is) 25, 26
open country 45
opinion 101, 163
or 10, 14 *and passim*
orange 108
orphan 139
orthodox 50
other 82
our 55, 63
ourselves (56), 68, 96
out of doors 196
overcoat 159
own (*adj.*) 56, 137–8
ox 131

pain 130
painter 101
painting 101
palace 39
pale 78
pants 159
paper 42
parents 58
pass (me) 158
passport 43
past (*adj.*) 78
pastry 107
path 133
patronymic 54
pavement 40
peace 4, 101
peaches 108
pear 108
peasant (man) 36, 62
peasant (woman) 32, 62
peasant's hut 32
pen 42
pencil 42
penholder 42
people 38, 96
people (the, a) 46
pepper 106
performance 101
permit me 158
person 129
piano 101
picture 101
pie 106, 107
piece 109
piece of luggage 67, 112
pig 131
pigeon 132
pillow 41
pillow-case 41
pin 160
pink (*subst.*) 133
pipe 109
place 32, 46
plain (clear) 78
plant 133
plate 43

platform 44
play 101
pleasant 20, 75
please 12
pleased 22
pleases (it — me) 158
pleasure 101
plum 108
pocket 161
pocket-book 161
poem 101
police (man) 43
police-court 43
poor 75, 76
poplar 133
poppy 133
pork 107
porter 43
portrait 41
possible (it is) 12
post-card 42, 171
post-office 39
potato 107
pound (lb.) 45, 114–19
presence (in the — of) 185, 198–9
present (*adj.*) 78
pretty 20, 75
previous (the) 78
price 45
priest 60
priest's wife 60
Prince 61
Princess 61
profitable 156
property (land) 9, 32, 46
province 46
pud 45, 114–19
pupil 60
puppy 131
purse 161
put 170

quarter 119–20
quay 40
queen 61
quick 77
quiet 77
quilt 41
quite 11, 21
quite (not) 11, 21

rabbit 132
radish 107
railway 44
railway-carriage 44
rain 8, 47
ram 131
rapid 77
rare 74
raspberries 108
rather more, rather less 128
raw 77
razor 161
ready 23
ready (*adj.*) 76
really 11, 25, 26
reaping 133
receipt 44
red 78
red-haired 78
refreshment-room 38
region 46
regret 101
require (I) 157
restaurant 38
return 199
rich 76
rifle 32
right (*adj.*) 74
right (all) 7, 17
right (to be) 23
right (to the, on the) 10
ring 161
ripe 77
river 45
road 44
roast beef 106
Roman Catholic 50
room (a) 32, 40
room (= place), *v.* place
rose 133
rouble 44, 80, 114–19

rough 77
round 74
rowing-boat 45
rows (covered) 39
rude 77
rug 161
rye 133

sable 132
sad 76
safe (it is) 25, 27
safety pin 160
said 179
salmon 132
salt 5, 6, 8, 106
same (the) 88
sash 160
satisfied 22
sauce 106
saucer 42
sausage 107
school 39
scissors 160
scrambled eggs 107
screen 42
sea 5, 45
seat (in train etc.) 67
second 82
see (come and) 162
self 56, 68, 96
sentry 80
serious 23
seriously 21
servant 60
shall be 30
shallow 74
shawl 161
she 13, 14, 55
sheaf 133
sheep 8, 131
sheet 41
sheet (of paper) 42
shelf 41
shirt 159
shop 32, 39
shoes 159
shore 35, 45
short 74
short (a — way) *v.* near
should be 29
should have been 29
shoulder(s) 37, 93, 130
show me 158, 166
shrine 39
shut (it is) 25, 26
sick 76, 156
side 46, 187
sideboard 41
silver 45
simple 76
Sir 61
sister 58
skin 129
skirt 160
sky 8, 37, 48, 95
sledge 43
sleeping-car 44
sleeve(s) 160
slippers 159
slow 77
slower ! 128
slush 8, 47
small change 44
small 73, 81–2
smaller 74
smallest 87
smooth 77
snake 132
snow 47
so 12
so few 12
so little, *v.* such a little
so many, *v.* so much
so much 11, 12
soap 41
society 32
socks 159
soda-water 113
sofa 41
soft 77
soldier 93
sole (of foot) 130

some 11, 56, 69, 82, 83, 87, 112, 113
somehow 13
somehow or other 13
some one 86
something 86
some time 13
some time or other 13
sometimes 10
somewhere 12
somewhere or other 12
son 37, 58, 95
song 101
sorry (I am) 166
sort (what, every) 82, 87
sort (no, some) 83
sort (*subst.*) 108
sort of 13
soul 129
soup 106
sour 77
south(ern) 48
Sovereign (the) 61
sparrow 132
sparse 74
spectacles 161
spinster 61
spirit 129
sponge 41
spoon 43
spring (season) 47
spring (*adj.*) 78
square 40
square (*adj.*) 74
squirrel 132
stables 39
stage 101
stairs 40
stamp(s) 42, 163, 170
star 48
starch 160
station 38, 128, 170
steak 106
steamer 45
steed 8, 131
steel 45
steppe 45
stewed fruit 107
stick 160
still (*conj.*) 9, 11
stockings 159
stomach 130
stone 40
store-room 40, 80
stork 132
story (floor) 39
story (of house) 3, 39, 196
story, *v.* tale
straight 76
strap 161
strawberries 108
street 40, 196
string 42
stroke (a) 7
strong 76, 77
stud 160
study 40
subject (of a state) 80
such 83, 86
such a little 12
such a lot 12
such as 13
sugar 90, 108
suit 159
summer 47
summer (*adj.*) 78
sun 48
superfluous 76
supper 9, 109
surely ? 12
surely not ? 12
surname 54
surprise 101
swallow 132
sweet 77
sweet(s) 93, 107, 108
swift 77
sympathetic 75

table 32, 41
table (at) 181
table-cloth 41

tailor's 39
take 154
tale 100
tall 71, 74
taxi 44
tea 90, 109, 112
tea-pot 42
tea-urn 42
teacher 60
tedious 76
telegram 46
telegraph-office 46
telephone 46
tell me 158
temperature 130
terminus 38
terrible 76
than 18, 19
thank you 12, 166, 170
thanks 154
that (those) 13, 14, 57
thaw 47
theatre 38
their 105
themselves (56), 68, 96
then 10, 198–9
there 10, 14 *and passim*
there are, *v.* there is
there is (вотъ) 11, 15
there is not 10, 27, 91
there is (есть) 27
thereupon 198–9
thermometer 130
they 13, 14, 55
thick 74
thin 74
thing 33, 44
third 82
this (these) 3, 13, 57, 65, 167
thou 16, 17, 55
thread 160
throat 129
through 171
thus 12
thy 55, 63
thyself (56), 68, 96
ticket 32, 43
ticket-office 44
tie 160
tiger 132
till 144
time 9, 33, 46
time (a) 7, 46, 93, 112, 169
time (at that) 169
time (in the—of) 185, 198–9
time (a long) 17
time (in good) 169
tip 43
to 162, 167
to-day 10, 16, 30
to-morrow 30
tobacco 90, 109
toe 130
toilet 44
tomato 107
tongue 107, 129
too 11, 25, 26
too little 11
too much 11
tooth 129
top (on the) 187
total (sum) 45
towel 41
tower 39
town 35, 46
train 44
tram 44
tray 170
tree 37, 95, 133
trousers 159
trunk 161
Tsar (the) 61
Tsaritsa (the) 61
tsar 2, 60
tsarevich 60
tsaritsa 60
tsesarevich 60
tub (bath) 41
tumbler 42
tumbler-stand 42
turkey-hen 107
turnip 107

ugly 20, 75
umbrella 160
uncle 58
uncomfortable 76
under 182
undervest 159
unfortunate 22
unhappiness 101
unhappy 22, 76
uninteresting 76
university 39
unjust (it is) 18
unlucky 22
unnecessary (it is) 12
unpleasant (*adj.*) 75, 155
unpleasant (it is) 18, 20
until 144
unusual 76
unwell 20
up to 144
upper 74
usual 76

vacant (it is) 25
veal 106
vegetable 107
vegetable-bed 133
verst 45, 114–19
very 11, 18
very well 18
very (the) 83
vessel (ship) 37, 95
vest 159
vestibule 40
via 171
view 46
villa 39
village 32, 46
vinegar 106
violet (*subst.*) 133
visitor(s) 142
vodka 108
volume 8, 100

wagon, *v.* cart
waistcoat 159
waiter, 62
waiting-room 40
wall 41
walnut 108
want (I) 156–7
war 101
warm (it is) 24, 25
warm (I am) 154
warm (*adj.*) 77
was 4, 28
wash (the) 160
wash-stand 41
wasp 132
watch (clock) 42
water 27, 108, 113
water-bottle 43
water-melon 108
waterproof 160
way (*subst.*) 44, 174
way (a long), *v.* far
way (a short), *v.* near
W.C. 40
we 16, 55
weather 47
week 32, 46
weight 45
well ! 10
well (far from) 21
well (in health) 20
well (very) 18, 154
were 28
west(ern) 48
wet 77
what 13, 56, 82, 84, 86
what a little 12
what a lot 12
what like 82, 87
wheat 133
wheel 44
when 10
where 7, 10 *and passim*
which 82, 84
whiskers 129
white 78
who 7, 13, 56
whole (the) 57, 65

whose 56, 67
why, 144, 163
wicked 75
wife 59
will be 30
wind 47
window 41, 95
wine 108
wine-glass 43
winter 47
winter (*adj.*) 78
wish (I) 104
with 184
without 144
wolf 132
woman (peasant) 32, 62
woman 61–2
wood, *v.* tree
wood (forest) 45
wood fuel 42
wool 161
word 101
work 46
work (literary) 100
world 4, 48
worse (it is) 18, 19, 122, 155
worst 88
worthless 75
would be 29
would have been 29
wrist 130
writer 101
writing-paper 42
writing-table 41
written 179
wrong (it is unjust) 18
wrong (to be) 23

yard (measure) 93, 161
yard (court-) 39
year 7, 46, 47, 114–19
yellow 78
yes 10, 13, 28
yesterday 30
yet 9, 11 *and passim*
yet (not) 11
yonder (that —) 57
you 16, 17, 55
young 70, 78
younger 78, 88
youngest 88
young lady 60
your 56, 62
yourselves (56), 68, 96

SUBJECT-INDEX

age (expression of) 161
authors (names of) 80, 104
countries (names of) 49, 167–8
date (the) 121–2
days of the week (the) 47, 84, 163, 168
food and drink (portions of) 112–13, 115, 119, 126–7, 184
meals 109, 169, 184
money (expression of money-values) 44, 80, 109, 111, 114–19, 163
months (names of the) 47, 121
names (family) 54, 80, 104, 124
names (personal, use of) 54
names (personal) 33, 52, 80, 104, 125, 126
nationalities 49, 79, 181–2, 197
numerals 69, 82, 114–22, 161
personal names (use of) 54
price (expression of) 163, 170, 198–9
rivers (names of) 51, 196
seasons (the) 47, 167, 180
time of day 119–20, (cf. 167), 169, 180–1
times (of the year), *v.* seasons
towns (names of) 51, 196

Printed in England at the Oxford University Press

OXFORD RUSSIAN PLAIN TEXTS

New Series under the general editorship of

NEVILL FORBES

Crown 8vo, limp cloth. In clear type.

May 1920

'It is impossible to praise too highly the series of Russian Plain Texts. . . . Printed on excellent paper . . . in a type which should one day be universal in Russia and which in the Oxford editions is very much more readable than any other type, large or small, that we have seen ; short works by all the great Russian authors in prose and verse have either appeared or are in preparation.'—*Journal of Education.*

'Show what exquisite printing in Russian type can be done in England . . . should be in the hands of all students of Russian.'—*The Times.*

(Of Tolstoy's *Prisoner of the Caucasus*, annotated.) 'A model little reader for beginners. . . . The notes and glossary are ideal.'—*Daily Mail.*

Leo Tolstóy. A Prisoner of the Caucasus, edited by E. G. UNDERWOOD. Pp. 64. 1s. 6d. net. Also with introduction, notes, and vocabulary, by E. G. UNDERWOOD and NEVILL FORBES. Pp. xxxvi + 128. 3s. net.

Turgénev. Pegasus, Biryúk, Forest and Steppe, edited by E. G. UNDERWOOD and NEVILL FORBES. Pp. 56. 1s. 9d. net.

Púshkin. The Queen of Spades, edited by E. G. UNDERWOOD. Pp. 64. 1s. 9d. net.

Gógol. An Old-World Country-House, edited by NEVILL FORBES. Pp. 64. 1s. 9d. net.

Dostoévski. A Christmas-Tree and a Wedding, An Honest Thief, edited by NEVILL FORBES. Pp. 64. 1s. 9d. net.

Saltykóv. Pilgrims and Wayfarers, Bygone Times (from the *Provincial Sketches*), edited by NEVILL FORBES. Pp. 80. 1s. 9d. net.

Korolénko. In the Night, Easter Eve, edited by NEVILL FORBES. Pp. 96. 1s. 9d. net.

Goncharóv. Men-servants of Other Days, edited by NEVILL FORBES. Pp. 80. 1s. 9d. net.

Krilóv. Select Fables, edited by E. G. UNDERWOOD. Pp. 62. 1s. 9d. net.

Lérmontov. Selected Poems, edited by E. G. UNDERWOOD. Pp. 64. 1s. 9d. net.

Gárshin. What Never Happened, The Meeting, The Signal, Four Days, edited by I. WILLIAMS and NEVILL FORBES. Pp. 112 2s. 6d. net.

Editions of the above will also be issued with introductions, notes and vocabularies. Other volumes by Grigoróvich, Aksákov, Gleb Uspénski, Pushkin, and Chékhov are in preparation.

BOOKS BY NEVILL FORBES

Elementary Russian Grammar, with exercises and indexes. 3s. net.

Russian Grammar for more advanced students. Second edition, revised and enlarged, with indexes. 6s. net.

'Admirably suited for its purpose.'—*Athenaeum.*

'Practical as well as scholarly.'—*Manchester Guardian.*

'The fullest and most scientific of these books is Mr. Forbes's *Russian Grammar.* Mr. Forbes has a wide experience of Slavonic languages and their pronunciation.'—*Modern Language Review.*

First Russian Book. Second edition. A Practical Manual of Russian Declensions. The case-endings and vocabularies, with phonetic transcription and easy phrases. 3s. net.

'This admirably arranged manual by an accomplished philologist meets the needs of the beginner in Russian in a thoroughly adequate way. Difficulties are not shirked, and real help is afforded.'—*Journal of Education.*

'Original and useful to the student in that it treats the language without touching the complicated question of the verb.'—*Modern Language Review.*

Second Russian Book. Second edition. A Practical Manual of Russian Verbs. The most important verbs with full phonetic transcription, and numerous examples of their use. 3s. 6d. net.

Deals with the verb on the same principle as the First Book with case-endings, and is so planned that those who prefer to begin Russian by learning the verb can start with this book and use the other as a supplement.

Third Russian Book. Extracts from Aksákov, Grigoróvich, Hérzen, and Saltykóv, edited with full foot-notes and complete vocabulary. 3s. net.

A reading-book adapted for use with the Russian Grammar and the First and Second Russian Books. The selections are graduated in difficulty and the vocabulary and notes make it possible to read the book without the aid of any other volumes than the above.

'The notes are scholarly and are just what is wanted by an intelligent student, and the vocabulary is quite full enough to enable the learner to dispense with a larger dictionary.'—*Journal of Education.*

'Mr. Forbes supplies a capital and varied collection of fine literature.'—*Glasgow Herald.*

Fourth Russian Book. Russian and English Exercises, &c. Specially designed for use with the above volumes, including examples of Russian correspondence. Part I, English into Russian Exercises. 2s. net. *Now ready.* Part II, Russian into English Exercises. *In preparation.*

Serbian Grammar. By DRAGUTIN SUBOTIĆ and NEVILL FORBES. 7s. 6d. net.

'A great difficulty with beginners is the accent. Throughout the new grammar the Serbian words are marked with their appropriate accents, so that blunders of pronunciation can be avoided. . . . The grammar includes a large quantity of helpful examples, and is very clear on all difficult points.'—*Balkan News.*

An English Grammar for Serbs, by the same authors. 3s. 6d. net.

Two Volumes in the New Series of Histories of the Nations

Russia. A History from the Varangians to the Bolsheviks. By C. Raymond Beazley, Nevill Forbes, and G. A. Birkett. Crown 8vo. With six maps. 8s. 6d. net.

Far and away the best Russian history, in French or Engl sh, that we have yet come across. . . . For the first time, the average reader has put before him an intelligible and scientific account of the growth of Russia, the development of its institutions, and the rise and fall of its autocracy. This book should be in considerable demand.'—*New Statesman.*

'We welcome the very timely publication of this admirably designed and composed book.'—*Times.*

The Balkans. A History of Bulgaria, Serbia, Greece, Rumania, Turkey. By Nevill Forbes, A. J. Toynbee, D. Mitrany, D. G. Hogarth. With three maps. 6s. 6d. net.

'A most valuable addition to the history of the war. . . . The problems . . . of the Balkan peoples are discussed with intimate knowledge, and in a spirit so just and sanely sympathetic, as to reflect the greatest credit not only upon the writers, but on British scholarship generally.'—*Times Literary Supplement.*

'A worthy representative of the Oxford school of modern history, a book which the serious student of modern politics is bound to possess.'—*Journal of Education.*

'Such a compact summary of Balkan history one can find nowhere else, and the writers' views on the whole Balkan problem are of singular interest and importance.'—*London Quarterly Review.*

Three Lectures, by Nevill Forbes. Paper covers. The Slavonic Languages, 1s. 3d. net; Polish Literature, 1s. net; Tolstoi, 1s. net.

A Short History of Russia. By Lucy Cazalet. Crown 8vo, with eight illustrations and a map. 2s. 6d. net.

'Simply and succinctly told.'—*The Times.*

'A really good elementary history. It is written in a concise manner and states its facts neatly and clearly.'—*Scottish Historical Review.*

A READER BY PERCY DEARMER

A First Russian Reader from L. N. Tolstoy. Compiled, with English notes and a vocabulary, by P. Dearmer and A. Tananevich. Crown 8vo, cloth, pp. 80. 2s. net.

'Will enable the student to obtain an excellent knowledge of the Russian language.'—*The Schoolmaster.*

'The notes to these short extracts are precisely what the learner needs.'—*Journal of Education.*